



Sudesh Kumar & Sangita Gupta

**Ankit Mahajan &
Rama Sharma**

**Ajay Kumar, Sahil Gupta,
Shashi S. Sharma
& Madhulika Bhagat**

**Sneahpreet Kour, Brajeshwar
Singh, Diksha Raina &
Akanksha Rathore**

Kamal Singh Chauhan

Ravideep Badyal & Vinod Kumar

Pallavi Prasad

Shivani Sharma

Tejeshwar Singh

Asif Ali & Rabinder Singh

**Ruqia Ayoub &
Abdul Gani**

**Farah. S. Choudhary &
Alka Sharma**

Sumit Garg & Sushil Kumar

Meenu Verma

ਹਰਜਿੰਦਰ ਸਿੰਘ

RESEARCHER

A Multidisciplinary Journal

Vol. XIV No.2, 2018

ISSN 2278-9022

SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY

Library Software Packages with Special Reference to LIBSYS-7, SOUL 2.0, AFW and KOHA: A Study of University Libraries Falling in Jammu Region

Diabetes mellitus: Risk factors, Diagnosis and Management, a Review

Characterization of *Picea smithiana* (Wall.) Boiss essential oil and its antibacterial effect against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus sample

Bioprospecting Thermophilic Bacteria from Geothermal Springs of Jammu Division for Industrial Enzymes

SOCIAL SCIENCES

Disaster Management in India: Analysis of Institutional Framework and Policy Perspective

Role of Governor in Center-State Relations: Change in Trends

Tribes and Tribals in Early India

Military Dominance in Pakistan

BUSINESS STUDIES

Modeling the Effects of Country of Origin Image on Quality Perceptions and Brand Loyalty: A Study of Chinese Mobile

Understanding Students' Acceptance of e-Learning Systems: Using Technology Acceptance Model

Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir

Mediating Role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards Visual Merchandising in Online Context

ARTS AND HUMANITIES

Marginalisation and Traumatic effects of Cancer: A Study of *The Kiss of Life* by Emraan Hashmi

Buddhist Education and the Present Scenario in the Indian University System.

ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ : ਸਵੈ-ਵਿਕਾਸ ਦੀ ਸਿਰਜਣਾ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ

The Journal of University of Jammu

Editorial Board

Patron

Prof Manoj Kumar Dhar
Vice-Chancellor, University of Jammu, Jammu, J&K, India

Editor

Anupama Vohra DDE, University of Jammu

Editorial Team

Bijender Kumar Bajaj	School of Biotechnology, University of Jammu
Garima Gupta	Department of English, University of Jammu
Jaspal Singh Warwal	Directorate of Distance Education, University of Jammu
Komal Nagar	The Business School, University of Jammu
Raj Kumar Sandhu	Department of Law, University of Jammu

Advisory Board

Arts and Humanities

Amritjit Singh	Department of English, Ohio University Langston Hughes, USA
G.D. Sumanapala	Institute of Pali & Buddhist Studies, University of Kelaniya, Sri Lanka
Kuldeep Agnihotri	Vice-Chancellor, Central University of Himachal Pradesh
Sadashiv K Dwivedi	Department of Sanskrit, Faculty of Arts, Banaras Hindu University
Sunil Kumar	School of Performing and Visual Arts, IGNOU, New Delhi

Business Studies

Gurmeet Singh	School of Management, University of the South Pacific, Fiji
Mohinder Chand	Department of Tourism & Hotel Management, Kurukshetra University
S.P. Bansal	Vice-Chancellor, Indira Gandhi University, Meerpur, Haryana
Nimit Choudhary	Department of THHHS, Jamia Millia Islamia, New Delhi
Vertica Bhardwaj	School of Family & Consumer Sciences, Texas State University, USA

Science and Technology

John Bothwell	School of Biological & Biomedical Sciences, Durham University, UK
Ramesh C. Sharma	Department of Environmental Sciences, HNB Gharwal University
S.K. Matoo	Department of Computer Science, University of Delhi
Vijender K. Yadav	Department of Chemistry, Indian Institute of Technology, Kanpur
Vinay Gupta	Sr. Scientist, National Physical Laboratory, New Delhi

Social Sciences

Dhian Kaur	Department of Geography, Panjab University, Chandigarh
Pritam Singh	Department of Economics, Oxford Brooks University, UK
R.C. Thakran	Department of History, University of Delhi
Rekha Saxena	Department of Political Science, University of Delhi
S.P. Singh	Department of Humanities and Social Sciences, IIT, Roorkee
Yubaraj Sangroula	Kathmandu School of Law & Former Attorney General (Nepal)

RESEARCHER

A Multidisciplinary Journal

Vol. XIV No. 2, 2018
ISSN 2278-9022

CONTENTS

SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY

1. Library Software Packages with Special Reference to LIBSYS-7, SOUL 2.0, AFW and KOHA: A Study of University Libraries Falling in Jammu Region 1-11
Sudesh Kumar & Sangita Gupta
2. Diabetes mellitus: Risk factors, Diagnosis and Management, a Review 12-27
Ankit Mahajan & Rama Sharma
3. Characterization of *Picea smithiana* (Wall.) Boiss essential oil and its antibacterial effect against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus sample 28-34
Ajay Kumar, Sahil Gupta, Shashi S. Sharma & Madhulika Bhagat
4. Bioprospecting Thermophilic Bacteria from Geothermal Springs of Jammu Division for Industrial Enzymes 35-46
Sneahpreet Kour, Brajeshwar Singh, Diksha Raina & Akanksha Rathore

SOCIAL SCIENCES

5. Disaster Management in India: Analysis of Institutional Framework and Policy Perspective 47-61
Kamal Singh Chauhan
6. Role of Governor in Center-State Relations: Change in Trends 62-77
Ravideep Badyal & Vinod Kumar
7. Tribes and Tribals in Early India 78-89
Pallavi Prasad
8. Military Dominance in Pakistan 90-97
Shivani Sharma

BUSINESS STUDIES

9. Modeling the Effects of Country of Origin Image on Quality Perceptions and Brand Loyalty: A Study of Chinese Mobile 98-110
Tejeshwar Singh
10. Understanding Students Acceptance of e-Learning Systems: Using Technology Acceptance Model 111-121
Asif Ali & Rabinder Singh

- | | | |
|-----|--|---------|
| 11. | Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir | 122-133 |
| | <i>Ruqia Ayoub & Abdul Gani</i> | |
| 12. | Mediating Role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards Visual Merchandising in Online Context | 134-150 |
| | <i>Farah. S. Choudhary & Alka Sharma</i> | |

ARTS AND HUMANITIES

- | | | |
|-----|--|---------|
| 13. | Marginalization and Traumatic effects of Cancer: A Study of <i>The Kiss of Life</i> by Emraan Hashmi | 151-159 |
| | <i>Sumit Garg & Sushil Kumar</i> | |
| 14 | Buddhist Education and the Present Scenario in the Indian University System. | 160-166 |
| | <i>Meenu Verma</i> | |
| 15 | ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੋਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ : ਸਵੈ-ਵਿਕਾਸ ਦੀ ਸਿਰਜਣਾ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ | 167-177 |
| | ਹਰਜਿੰਦਰ ਸਿੰਘ | |

SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY

Library Software Packages with Special Reference to LIBSYS-7, SOUL 2.0, AFW and KOHA: A Study of University Libraries Falling in Jammu Region

Sudesh Kumar *and Sangita Gupta **

ABSTRACT

Automation and computerization of the libraries have become a crucial factor for achieving the objectives of the users of the present as well as the future generations. It has also become essential for the librarians to have inter-connected relationship with the major libraries of the world in order to facilitate their users with the latest study materials required for their specific purpose.

During the last two decades, we have seen many changes around the world in the field of library and information Science. Many libraries and information institutions have managed to improve their capability, efficiency, services and productivity by using the new technologies. This study has been conducted with the different types of library software packages used in the university libraries falling in Jammu Region. The main thought behind the study is to provide some basic idea to librarians/policy makers to help them in selecting the appropriate library software package for their respective libraries/institutions. Library software packages being used in selected university libraries of Jammu Region have been taken for the study. Data have been collected from the automated university libraries and the university libraries that were not automated or that do not use library management software package are not represented in the study.

Keywords: Library Automation, Libsys-7, Koha, SOUL 2.0, Alice for windows.

Introduction

Library management is the systematic method of managing the entire library collection through a simple and interactive interface i.e. library management software package. Software is the crucial component of any computer system. It is the main constituent that makes the computer to manipulate data. Software is a set of interlinked programs that determine the processing of the system. Without suitable software the computer is just a machine. Software is the main boundary between the machine and the man. It is responsible for the processing whether numerical or logical. (Anil Singh, 2003)

The Library Management Software Packages creates so many opportunities for librarians to provide modern and more efficient services to the readers with the help of created database developed through the library software. The database record is maintained by the library staff with the help of software packages includes, database creation, data collection, ordering, book selection, cataloguing, indexing, abstracting, circulation, budgeting, graphical table, annual report, bill passing, newspaper clipping, OPAC, literature search, due date files, CAS, SDI, document profile, users profile, periodical acquisition, list of new additions, current contents, etc., and some other online services as selection of journal, subscription of journal, serial cataloguing, checking missing issues,

* Research Scholar, Dept. of Library & Information Sciences, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

** Prof. & Head, Dept. of Library & Information Sciences, University of Jammu, Jammu, India (corresponding author)

OPAC for serial, online database, exchange list, budget control, etc., it means software packages provides many facilities for effective library services which cannot be possible with manual systems. (Chouksey, 2012)

Library Management Software packages are divided into two types, that is commercial library management software packages and free/open source library management software packages. Commercial Software packages are the models where the software is developed by a commercial unit/body that is typically licensed for a fee to the customer, either directly or indirectly. The commercial unit often provides support, training, updates and other similar services needed by customers to efficiently and effectively use that software. The source code of the software may be made available to certain users of the software through special licensing or through other agreements, but is usually not distributed to the general public freely, and may not be copied or modified except in a manner provided for in such agreements. (Malla, 2012)

Free/Open source is a software development model as well as a software distribution model, where the source code of programs is made freely available with the software itself so that anyone can copy, change, modify and distribute it provided they abide by the accompanying license. In this sense, open source software differs from the closed source or proprietary software which may only be obtained by some form of payment, either by purchase or by leasing. The main difference between the two is the freedom to modify the OSS software. (Atri, 2009)

Objectives of the study

- * To evaluate the Library Software Packages being used in University Libraries falling in Jammu region.
- * To compare the different features of the Library Software Packages against some checklist points.
- * To find out the librarians' opinion on the performance of the Library Software Packages in use and assess their level of satisfaction with the Software and the vendor

Research Methodology

The method used for the current research is analytical descriptive. Both the primary and secondary sources have been consulted for the completion of the present work. All the Library Software Packages being used in University libraries falling in Jammu region have been studied and analyzed. The survey method with questionnaire as a tool has been used to gather primary data from the Librarians or I/C Librarians of the University Libraries under study and the data so collected from the survey has been suitably arranged, classified and analyzed.

Analysis

Five university libraries of Jammu Region were surveyed for the present study:

1. Dhanvantri Library, University of Jammu
2. Directorate of Distance Education Library, University of Jammu
3. Baba Ghulam Shah Badshah University Library, Rajouri
4. Sher-e-Kashmir University of Agricultural Sciences and Technology, Jammu
5. Central University of Jammu, Jammu

Table-1. The address of the University Libraries and the abbreviations used.

S.No.	Name of the Library	Abbreviation Used	Address
01	Dhanvantri Library, University of Jammu	DLJU	University of Jammu, Baba Sahib Ambedkar Road, Jammu, 180006
02	Directorate of Distance Education Library University of Jammu	DDEJU	University of Jammu, Baba Sahib Ambedkar Road, Jammu 180006
03	Baba Ghulam Shah Badshah University Library	BGSBU	Rajouri, Jammu, 185131
04	Shere-e-Kashmir University of Agriculture Science and Technology Library, Jammu	SKUAST-J	Chatha, Jammu, 180009
05	Central University of Jammu, Jammu	CUJ	Raya Suchani, Samba (J&K)- 181143

Table-2. LMS used and the year of Start

S.No.	Name of the Library	LMS used	Year of Start
01	DLJU	Libsys-7	2004
02	DDEJU	Alice for windows(AFW)	2010
03	BGSBU	SOUL 2.0	2008
04	SKUAST-J	SOUL 2.0	2005
05	CUJ	KOHA	2015

After the collection of data, it is found that BGSBU, Rajouri and SKUAST-Jammu are using SOUL 2.0 library management software in their libraries. Dhanvantri library, University of Jammu is using Libsys-7 software, DDE- University of Jammu is using ALICE for windows and the Central University of Jammu is using KOHA open source software for library management.

Table-3. Retrospective Conversion

S.No.	Name of the Institution/Library	Retrospective Conversion
01	DLJU	50-60%
02	DDEJU	Completed
03	BGSBU	Completed
04	SKUAST-J	Upto 40%
05	CUJ	Completed

Table-3 clearly indicates that DDEJU, CUJ and BGSBU have completed their library retrospective conversion, DLJU have done 50-60% retrospective conversion of data, whereas SKUAST-J has done upto 40% retrospective conversion of data.

Further through personal interview with the Librarian/Professional of DLJU, it is found that almost all the books in DLJU are automated, but the collection in Departmental libraries before 2003 has not been entered in the database yet. However cataloguing module has been installed in most of the departmental libraries and retrospective conversion is under process.

Table-4. Value added features

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Content acquisition	No	No	Yes	No
02	Content organization and management	Yes	No	Yes	No
03	User interface	Yes	Yes	No	Yes
04	System platform	No	No	No	No
05	Search facility	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
06	Storage features	Yes	Yes	Yes	No
07	Interoperability	Yes	No	No	Yes
08	Standard Compliance	Yes	Yes	No	Yes

Table-4 clearly indicates that in SOUL 2.0 software almost all the features are available except the content acquisition and system platform features which are unavailable in this software. Whereas in AFW software the features like content acquisition, system platform, content organization and management and Interoperability are not available, rest all the features are available.

Table-5. Acquisition Module

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Facilitate easy preparation of acquisition orders	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Centralized procurement	Yes	Yes	Yes	No
03	Online indenting and approval	No	No	No	No
04	Enable correct and up-to-date record of orders	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
05	Facilitate simple accessioning and invoice processing	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
06	Enable to maintain up-to-date vendor database	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
07	Help in orders preparation	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
08	Help in sending reminders to vendors	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

Table-5, clearly shows that most of the features associated with acquisition module are available in all the LMS packages under study. Further the study indicates that the feature, online indenting and approval is not available in any of the LMS packages under study.

Table-6. Cataloguing Module

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Facilitate Net cataloguing	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Enable import and export of data	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
03	Generate and maintain authority file	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
04	Support international standards	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
05	Generate list of new catalogue records	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
06	Generate catalogue cards	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

According to the Table-6, all the features associated with cataloguing module are found in all the library software packages under study.

Table -7. Circulation Module

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Help in Creating membership database of different categories with different parameters	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Help in Generating patron ID cards with required personal details	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
03	Help in Supporting automatic generation of due date slips and issue reminders for overdue books	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
04	Compatibility with security system like RFID/Bar Code for self Check in and Check out	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
05	Help in automatic generation of fine	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
06	Help in stock verification	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
07	Help in Generating statistical report	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

Table-7 shows that the entire important features are present in SOUL 2.0, Alice for Windows and Libsys-7 software packages.

Table-8. Serial Control Module

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Help in easy input of serial data for check-in	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Help in easy subscription of new journal and avoids duplication	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
03	Help in renewal, cancellati on and extension of subscription	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
04	Help in Keeping records of missing issues	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
05	Help in invoice processing	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
06	Help in sending automatic reminders to claim issues that have not been received	No	Yes	No	Yes
07	Help in search and retrieval facility	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
08	Help in Generating list of serials holding	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

AFW support all the important features associated with the serial control module (Table-8). In SOUL 2.0 and Libsys-7 software packages, all the features are present except the feature listed at serial no. 6.

Table-9. Online Public Access Catalogue (OPAC) Module

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Support Multiple Search strategy	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Support Multimedia access	No	No	Yes	Yes
03	Support Filtering	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
04	Support Sorting	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
05	Support Patron empowerment	No	Yes	No	Yes
06	Support Z39.50 compliant	No	Yes	No	Yes
07	Support Multi-lingual access through Unicode	No	No	No	Yes
08	Support Security	No	Yes	Yes	Yes
09	Support Full-text retrievals	No	No	No	Yes

Table -9 shows that most of the important features are not supported by the SOUL 2.0 software and it only support the features like, multiple search strategy, filtering and sorting. AFW supports more features as compared to other software packages; however AFW does not support the features like Multimedia access, Multi-lingual access through Unicode and full-text retrievals.

Table-10. Software compatibility with MARC 21 and DUBLIN CORE

S.No.	Software	Compatibility
01	SOUL 2.0	Yes
02	AFW	Yes
03	Libsys-7	Yes
04	KOHA	Yes

From the Table -10, it is clear that all the software packages under study are compatible with MARC 21 and DUBLIN CORE standards.

Table-11. Compatibility with RFID and Bar Code

S.No.	Library Software	Compatibility
01	SOUL 2.0	Yes
02	AFW	Yes
03	Libsys-7	Yes
04	KOHA	Yes

Table-11 shows that, that all the software packages under study are compatible with RFID and BAR CODE technologies.

Security system plays a very important role in the selection of library management software packages. Today the library software packages are developed in accordance with the in-built security features like identification of membership, Sensor Gates, theft detection, Stock Verification, etc. Table-12 shows that all the important features associated with RFID and BAR CODE are available in all the library software packages under study as they are developed in-compliance to the new standards.

Table-12. Features supported by RFID and Bar Code

S.No.	Features	SOUL 2.0	AFW	LIBSYS-7	KOHA
01	Support Self Check-in/check-out	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Support Stock Verification	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
03	Sensor gates	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
04	Support Issue of No due certificates	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
05	Users Statistics	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
06	Support Identification of membership	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

Table-13. Provision of Training Facilities by the vendor of the Software

S.No.	Library	Training Facilities
01	BGSBU	Yes
02	DDEJU	Yes
03	DLJU	Sometimes
04	CUJ	No
05	SKUAST-J	No

From the Table-13, it is clear that vendor of the library software does not providing training facilities to the CUJ and SKUAST-J libraries. However the vendor is in contact with the DLJU for sometimes. Software vendor provides training facilities to the BGSBDU and DDEJU Libraries regularly.

Table - 14. Software Updation services by the vendor

S.No.	Institution/Library	Updation service
01	BGSBU	Yes
02	DDEJU	Yes
03	DLJU	Sometimes
04	CUJ	No
05	SKUAST-J	Sometimes

Table-14 shows that, the BGSBU and DDEJU libraries are getting the software updation service from the vendor regularly, whereas the SKUAST-J and DLJU libraries are getting the same service sometimes and not regularly. On the contrary no updation service is provided to the CUJ library.

Table-15. Time required in getting the service engineer

S.No.	Library	Time Required
01	BGSBU	Service engineer not required
02	DDEJU	One month
03	DLJU	Two Days
04	CUJ	No need of service engineer
05	SKUAST-J	One Week

Library Software Packages with Special Reference to LIBSYS-7, SOUL 2.0, AFW and KOHA: A Study of University Libraries Falling in Jammu Region

For maintenance and updation of the library software package, the service engineer required about one month time in DDEJU library, whereas it takes two days in DLJU and one week time required to get the service engineer in SKUAST-J. There is no need of service engineer in CUJ and BGSBDU libraries, because according to the librarian of BGSBU and the CUJ, the software package is least complex to handle and they can manage things in-house.

Table -16. Librarian's satisfaction level about the customer support services

S.No.	Institution/Library	Level of Satisfaction
01	BGSBU	Yes
02	DDEJU	Yes
03	DLJU	Yes
04	CUJ	No
05	SKUAST-J	No

The librarians of BGSBDU, DDEJU and DLJU libraries are fully satisfied with the customer support services provided by the software vendor, whereas the librarians of the CUJ and SKUAST-J are not satisfied with the same.

Table-17. Librarian's opinion about the LMS in saving the time of the users

S.No.	Library	Librarian's opinion
01	BGSBU	Yes
02	DDEJU	Yes
03	DLJU	Yes
04	CUJ	Yes
05	SKUAST-J	Yes

All the librarians of BGSBDU, DDEJU, SKUAST-J, CUJ and DLJU libraries are of the same opinion that the LMS installed have saved the time of the users.

Table-18. Librarian's opinion about the software in saving the time of the Library staff engaged in housekeeping operations

S.No.	Institution/Library	Librarian's opinion
01	BGSBU	Yes
02	DDEJU	Yes
03	DLJU	Yes
04	CUJ	Yes
05	SKUAST-J	Yes

All the librarians of BGSBDU, DDEJU, SKUAST-J, CUJ and DLJU libraries are of the same opinion that the LMS installed have saved the time of the library staff.

Table-19. Impact of software on library services

S.No.	Impact	BGSBU	DDEJU	DLJU	CUJ	SKUAST-J
01	Enhanced user satisfaction level	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
02	Increased circulation	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
03	Save the time of the users and staff	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes
04	Enabled self check in/ check out	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

According to the librarians of the BGSBDU, CUJ, DDEJU, SKUAST-J and DLJU, the LMS installed have enhanced user satisfaction level, increased the frequency of circulation, saved the time of the users and the library staff and also enabled self check-in and check-out.

Table-20. Problems faced in operating the library software

S.No.	Problems	BGSBU	DDEJU	DLJU	CUJ	SKUAST-J
01	Problem of Slow speed	Yes	No	No	No	Yes
02	Problem in acquisition	No	No	No	No	No
03	Problem in cataloguing	No	No	No	No	No
04	Problem in circulation	No	No	No	No	No
05	Problem in serial control	Yes	No	No	No	No
06	Compatibility issue with RFID and Barcode system	No	No	No	No	Yes

From the Table-20, it is clear that the libraries of DDEJU, CUJ and DLJU have none of the above stated problems in operating the LMS, whereas, the library of BGSBU is facing the problem in serial control and slow speed of the installed LMS. Similarly SKUAST-J is also facing the problem with slow speed of the software and compatibility issues with the RFID and Barcode technology.

Table-21. Improvement level in library services by using the library software

S.No.	Institution/Library	Improvement level
01	BGSBU	Greatly improved
02	DDEJU	Greatly improved
03	DLJU	Greatly improved
04	CUJ	Greatly improved
05	SKUAST-J	Least improved

According to the librarians of the DDEJU, BGSBDU, CUJ and DLJU, the library software installed have greatly improved the services of the libraries, whereas, according to the librarian of the SKUAST-J, the library services are least improved after the installation of the software package.

Table-22. Satisfaction level after using the software

S.No.	Institution/Library	Improvement level
01	BGSBU	Neither satisfied nor dissatisfied
02	DDEJU	Strongly satisfied
03	DLJU	satisfied
04	CUJ	Strongly satisfied
05	SKUAST-J	Dissatisfied

According to the Table-22, the BGSBU library is neither satisfied nor dissatisfied after using the software, whereas DDEJU and CUJ are strongly satisfied by the software installed in their library. DLJU is satisfied and SKUAST-J library is totally dissatisfied by the software installed in their libraries.

Table-23. Planning of the Institution/Library to shift over to new software

S.No.	Institution/Library	Librarian's opinion	New Software
01	BGSBU	Yes	KOHA
02	DDEJU	No	
03	DLJU	No	
04	CUJ	No	
05	SKUAST-J	No	

According to the Table-23, the BGSBU is planning to shift over a new software package KOHA (OSS), whereas there is no such planning of DDEJU, CUJ, DLJU and SKUAST libraries to shift over a new software package.

Table-24. Recommendations of the software to other institutions

S.No.	Institution/Library	Librarian's opinion
01	BGSBU	Yes
02	DDEJU	Yes
03	DLJU	Yes
04	CUJ	Yes
05	SKUAST-J	No

According to the Table-24, the BGSBU, DDEJU, CUJ and DLJU libraries have recommended the software package installed in their libraries to other institutions, whereas the SKUAST-J library does not recommend the same.

Table-25. Awareness about the Open Source Software and suggestions

S.No.	Institution/Library	Librarian's opinion	Suggestion of OSS
01	BGSBU	Yes	KOHA
02	DDEJU	Yes	KOHA
03	DLJU	Yes	KOHA
04	CUJ	Yes	KOHA
05	SKUAST-J	Yes	KOHA

All the libraries are well aware about the Open source Software packages and they all recommended the KOHA Open source Software package to other institutions.

Table-26. Awareness about the Digital library Management software (DLMS) and suggestions

S.No.	Institution/Library	Librarian's opinion	Suggestion of DLMS
01	BGSBU	Yes	Greenstone, Joomla, eprints
02	DDEJU	Yes	DSpace
03	DLJU	Yes	eprints
04	CUJ	Yes	DSpace
05	SKUAST-J	Yes	Fedora, Joomla, eprints

Similarly all the libraries are well aware about the Digital library Management software (DLMS). BGSBU library suggest the Greenstone, Joomla and eprints DLMS, whereas DDEJU and DLJU libraries suggest only Dspace and eprints respectively. SKUAST-J library suggests Fedora, Joomla and eprints DLMS for automation of the libraries.

Findings

- University of Jammu is using Libsys-7 software package for library automation, whereas BGSBU and SKUAST-J using SOUL 2.0 library software packages for the same. However, it is also found from the study that DDE and the Central University of Jammu are using Alice for window and KOHA (OSS) software respectively for their library automation.
- From the study it is found that DDEJU, CUJ and BGSBU have completed their library retrospective conversion. DLJU have done 40-60% retrospective conversion of data, whereas SKUAST-J has done upto 40% retrospective conversion of data. Further through personal interview with the Librarian/Professional of DLJU, it is found that almost all the books in DLJU are automated, but the collection in Departmental libraries before 2003 has not been entered in the database yet. However cataloguing module has been installed in most of the departmental libraries and retrospective conversion is under process.
- All the library software packages under study are compatible with the Bar Code and RFID technology.
- There is no customer support facility for library training and software updation for the SKUAST-J Library. Moreover, most of the librarians are not satisfied with the software vendor.
- BGSBU- Rajouri is planning to shift over to new open source software i.e. Koha
- The librarians of all the libraries are well aware about the open source software packages and they all suggested KOHA OSS for library management. Similarly all the librarians are well aware about the Digital Library Management Software Packages.
- BGSBU library suggest Greenstone, Joomla and eprints Digital Library Management Software (DLMS) for the library management, similarly DDEJU suggests DSpace, DLJU suggests ePrint sand SKUAST-J recommended Fedora, Joomla and Eprints DLMS for library management purpose

Conclusion

From the analysis it is concluded that the LIBSYS-7 software package is more suitable and reliable for the university libraries. However some libraries are planning to shift over to open source software packages such as KOHA, which is also considered as the 2nd choice of the libraries after LIBSYS-7. Further, there is need for proper MOU between the libraries and the software vendor as the software vendors of the library software packages are not providing the updation and training facilities to the libraries timely. There is also the need of speedy retro-conversion of the data, as it is found in the survey that some libraries are yet to complete their automation.

References

- Anil Singh (2003). Library automation and networking software in India: An overview. Information Development, 19, 51-56.
- Atri, Yogesh Kumar (2009). Free/Open Versus Commercial Software: A study of some selected Library Management Software. (Thesis accessed from Shodhganga on 12/10/2018).
- Chouksey, Shiv Sindhu (2012). Library services through library software: A case study of libraries of Indian Council of Social Science Research Institutes. Librarianship in the digital era, 233-242.
- Malla, Hilal Ahmad (2012). Usage and effectiveness of different software packages in the libraries of Kashmir University, IIT Delhi, IIT Kanpur : A Comparative Study. (Thesis accessed from Shodhganga on 12/10/2018).

Diabetes mellitus: Risk factors, Diagnosis and Management, a Review

Ankit Mahajan * and Rama Sharma **

ABSTRACT

Diabetes mellitus is a metabolic disorder affecting almost every part of the body ranging from eyes, kidneys, nerves, heart and blood vessels. The chronic hyperglycemia in diabetes results from inability of insulin resistance and insulin deficiency in later stages. Diabetes is approaching epidemic proportions globally and it is estimated that by the year 2025 about 333 million people shall be affected. In the coming years, India is expected to become the diabetes capital of the world because of genetic predisposition, sedentary lifestyle, and western eating habits. Therefore, it is very important for the population in general to be aware of the risk factors resulting in the development of diabetes. The awareness about the disease would be helpful for the general public in adopting a healthier lifestyle so that the onset of diabetes could be prevented or delayed. In the present review, an attempt has been made to write about the classification, diagnostic criteria, risk factors and the management of diabetes in a simple way for the general awareness of the public. This would further help in reducing the burden of the disease.

Keywords: Diabetes mellitus, Hyperglycemia, Epidemic, Awareness, Risk factors

Introduction

Diabetes mellitus is a complex metabolic disorder characterized by hyperglycemia resulting from defects in insulin secretion, insulin action or both. The chronic hyperglycemia of diabetes is associated with long-term damage, dysfunction, and failure of various organs, especially the eyes, kidneys, nerves, heart and blood vessels (El-Tantawy and Temraz, 2018). Diabetes is associated with disturbances in carbohydrate, fat and protein metabolism resulting from defects in insulin secretion, insulin action or both (Misra et al., 2008). The term “Diabetes” is a Greek word first used around 250 B.C meaning “to syphon” which indicates how diabetes rapidly drains fluid from the affected individual. Diabetes is an epidemic both in developed and developing countries. In the year 2000, there were about 171 million people above 20 years of age affected with diabetes worldwide (King et al., 1998). According to the latest estimates the number of people with diabetes worldwide would rise from 382 million in the year 2013 to 592 million by the year 2035 (Forouhi and Wareham, 2014).

Diabetes in India

Studies have shown that Indians have a higher predisposition to insulin resistance, type 2 diabetes and coronary artery disease as compared to other ethnic groups (Abate and Chandalia, 2001; McKeigue et al., 1991). Despite lower prevalence of obesity defined by body mass index (BMI),

* N-PDF, Human Genetics Research Group, S.M.V.D.U, Katra, Jammu, India (corresponding author)

** Research Scholar, Genome Research Laboratory, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

Indians have a typical “Asian Indian phenotype” characterized by greater degree of fat deposition around the belly resulting in increased waist circumference and waist to hip ratio. This central obesity is considered as one of the major factors contributing to increased prevalence of type 2 diabetes in Asian Indians (Joshi, 2003) (Ramachandran et al., 1997). Further, Asian Indians have more visceral fat for any given BMI (Raji et al., 2001). Visceral fat increases the risk of diabetes and hyperlipidemia by favouring insulin resistance (Chandalia et al., 1999). Thus, Asian Indians are genetically more prone to insulin resistance and diabetes. Urbanization, resulting in change in lifestyle with improved transportation facility, reduced physical activity, mental stress and availability of abundant food, is resulting in increased prevalence of type 2 diabetes.

Classification

Diabetes is divided into following major classes:-

- I) **Type 1 Diabetes mellitus:** Type I diabetes (T1D) results from the inability of the pancreas to produce insulin (Bach, 1994). The deficiency results from the autoimmune destruction of the pancreatic beta cells which may result in a situation which if uncompensated from an external source may lead to ketoacidosis, coma and death. The rate of destruction of β -cells is quite variable, being rapid in some individuals and slow in others. Individuals with Type I diabetes eventually become dependent on insulin for survival and at this stage of the disease, there is no insulin secretion; therefore this type is also called as Insulin-Dependent Diabetes Mellitus (IDDM) (Leslie et al., 2006). Markers of immune destruction, including islet cell autoantibodies, and/or autoantibodies to insulin, and autoantibodies to glutamic acid decarboxylase, are present in 85-90 % of individuals with type 1 diabetes. The diagnostic criteria for T1D include high blood glucose levels ($>125\text{mg/dl}$) and low plasma insulin levels. Hypoglycaemia is very common in T1D. Since T1D affects mostly children, it is also called as Juvenile onset diabetes.
- II) **Type 2 Diabetes mellitus:** Type 2 diabetes also known as Non-Insulin Dependent Diabetes Mellitus (NIDDM) is the most common form of diabetes accounting for 90% of the cases worldwide and is characterized by inability of insulin action and eventually insulin secretion, either of which may be the predominant feature (DeFronzo, 1997). Both are usually present at the time of clinical manifestation of this form. In type 2 diabetes both insulin's inhibitory effect on liver glucose production and its stimulatory effect on peripheral glucose uptake are diminished.
- III) **Gestational Diabetes:** Gestational diabetes is the type of diabetes observed during pregnancy. The condition may or may not persist after pregnancy period is over. Insulin may be used for the treatment of this form of diabetes. Normal glucose tolerance in early part of pregnancy does not itself establish that gestational diabetes may not develop later. Individuals at high risk for gestational diabetes include older women, those with previous history of glucose intolerance, those with a history of gestational diabetes and women from certain high-risk ethnic groups.

Symptoms and diagnostic criteria of diabetes

The most common symptoms of diabetes include extreme thirst (Polydipsia), hunger (Polyphagia), frequent urination (Polyuria), along with blurred vision, weight loss, fatigue, general

irritability. In 1997, an International Committee constituted to re-examine the classification and diagnostic criteria of diabetes, based on the report of the WHO study group, recommended the following diagnostic criteria for diabetes:

(a) Fasting Plasma Glucose (FPG): A person having ≥ 126 mg/dl Fasting Plasma Glucose (FPG) should be considered as diabetic, and one with FPG < 110 mg/dl as normal. The range of FPG levels between normal and diabetic suggests impaired fasting glucose (IFG).

(b) Oral Glucose Tolerance Test (OGTT): It consists of a Fasting plasma glucose sample; and 2 hour plasma glucose sample value, after a measured dose of glucose. Although, recognized as a valid way to diagnose diabetes, it was discouraged as a test for diagnostic purpose in clinical practice. For a person showing symptoms but normal fasting plasma glucose levels (FPG), Oral Glucose Tolerance test (OGTT) is recommended. In OGTT, a fasting plasma glucose sample is measured after at least 8 hours of fasting. Then 75 grams of glucose dissolved in 200 ml of water is given. Blood samples are taken after two hours. Blood glucose level between 140 and 199 mg/dl after 2 hours of drinking the liquid is described as a form of pre-diabetes called impaired glucose tolerance (IGT) and 200 mg/dl or above as diabetes after repeating the test next day (Stumvoll et al., 2005). The use of OGTT is helpful in conditions such as gestational diabetes and in where the fasting blood glucose levels are normal but the postprandial glucose levels are raised.

Non-Genetic factors associated with type 2 diabetes

Changing lifestyle because of urbanization has resulted in an upsurge of type 2 diabetes in India. The nationwide prevalence of diabetes in India is 9%, and is as high as 20% in relatively prosperous southern cities (Shetty, 2012). Urbanization has resulted in a change in lifestyle of the population with more people leading a sedentary life than ever before. There is also a change in the nutrition pattern with an increase in high calorie and fat rich diet. These factors have resulted in obesity which is a major risk factor for development of type 2 diabetes (Popkin, 1999). Following are the non-genetic factors associated with diabetes:

(a) Physical inactivity: For decades physical activity has been considered as a cornerstone of diabetes management, along with diet and medication. Two randomized trials independently found that approximately 150 min/week of physical activity and diet induced weight loss of 5-7%, reduces the risk of progression from impaired glucose tolerance (IGT) to type 2 diabetes by 58%, explaining the role of physical inactivity in the development of type 2 diabetes (Tuomilehto et al., 2001). In a cluster of randomized trial, it was found that diet alone; exercise alone, and combined diet and exercise were equally effective in reducing the progression from IGT to diabetes (Pan et al., 1997). The social environment and the modern sedentary behaviour including sitting during commuting, in the workplace, computer usage, television viewing etc., are increasing the physical inactivity and obesity, thereby enhancing the risk of diabetes (Owen et al., 2010)

(b) Diet: Diet is an important factor in the development of type 2 diabetes. Western dietary pattern has been associated with a 59 % increased risk of type 2 diabetes. This risk becomes even higher when combined with low physical activity or obesity (van Dam et al., 2002).

- (c) **Smoking and alcohol consumption:** Smoking has been considered as an independent risk factor for the development of type 2 diabetes. It is found that active smoking is associated with a higher incidence with an adjusted relative risk of 1.44 in the development of type 2 diabetes based on 25 cohort studies (Willi et al., 2007). It is believed that smoking increases the general inflammation and obesity in smokers which leads to insulin resistance and type 2 diabetes (Berlin, 2008). Alcohol consumption has been linked to type 2 diabetes and is considered as an important and modifiable risk factor, related to the possibility for type 2 diabetes through its effect on insulin secretion and sensitivity (Bell, 1996). Low incidence of diabetes is found in subjects with moderate alcohol consumption; whereas high alcohol consumption is linked to diabetes, through its effect on obesity (Burke et al., 2007; Wannamethee et al., 2003).
- (d) **Glucotoxicity and Lipotoxicity:** Chronic hyperglycaemia is a cause of impairment of insulin biosynthesis and secretion. Once hyperglycemia becomes apparent, β cell function gradually deteriorates (Moran et al., 1997); the process known as "Glucotoxicity". Similarly, free fatty acids which are essential fuels in the normal state become toxic at excessive levels, known as "Lipotoxicity" (Unger, 1995). Prolonged exposure of β cells to free fatty acids inhibits glucose induced insulin secretion (Bollheimer et al., 1998). Free fatty acids inhibit insulin gene expression and finally induce apoptosis in β cells (Shimabukuro et al., 1998).
- (e) **Obesity:** Obesity is a condition where the body fat deposition exceeds the normal limits resulting in an obese individual. Body mass index (BMI) which is measured as weight in kilograms divided by height in metres squared (Kg/m^2), is a relationship between weight and height and is considered as an index of obesity. $\text{BMI} > 25$ is considered overweight and > 30 is considered as obese. Asian Indians have low BMI as compared to other races but the association with glucose intolerance is as strong as in many other populations (Ramachandran et al., 2001; Sayeed et al., 2003; Shera et al., 1999). Despite low BMI, Asian Indians have higher visceral fat for a given BMI compared to the other ethnic groups which make them more susceptible towards type 2 diabetes (Snehalatha et al., 1997). The central obesity is an important risk indicator of diabetes and insulin resistance. Both obesity and type 2 diabetes are frequently associated and share many metabolic abnormalities, which suggest that they might also share susceptibility genes (Carmelli et al., 1994). A typical feature of obesity is inflammation which could result in insulin resistance. Tumor Necrosis Factor (TNF) was identified as a molecular link between inflammation and obesity when it was observed that this cytokine is over expressed in adipose tissues of obese rodent model (Hotamisligil et al., 1993; Wellen and Hotamisligil, 2005). The experimental models have clearly demonstrated that overproduction of $\text{TNF-}\alpha$ in adipose tissue is an important feature of obesity and contributes significantly to insulin resistance (Hotamisligil et al., 1993; Uysal et al., 1997).

Genetic factors associated with type 2 diabetes

The involvement of genetic factors in diabetes is supported by the facts that; i) the disease prevalence varies substantially among various ethnic groups e.g., in the Raika community of Rajasthan the prevalence of type 2 diabetes is almost nil; ii) the disease shows familial aggregation with a lifetime risk of developing the disease being about 40% in offspring of one parent with type 2 diabetes (Kobberling, 1982), greater if the mother is affected (Groop et al., 1996), the risk approaching 70% if both the parents have diabetes; iii) the concordance of type 2 diabetes in monozygotic twins is

approximately 70% compared with 20-30% in dizygotic twins (Kaprio et al., 1992; Newman et al., 1987).

Type 2 diabetes seems to result from several combined gene defects or from the simultaneous action of several susceptibility alleles or else from the combinations of frequent variants at several loci that have deleterious effects when predisposing environmental factors are present (Froguel and Velho, 2001). Genetic background plays a critical role in the pathogenesis of type 2 diabetes, while environment only slightly modifies the picture. In search of type 2 diabetes genes, two major strategies i.e genome wide scans and the candidate gene approach are used (Doria, 2000; McCarthy and Froguel, 2002). The genome wide association studies involve no prior assumption but the use of appropriate laboratory and analytical methods for a statistical indication of the probability of co-segregation of a disease with a specific chromosomal locus. The presence of a positive indication is defined as a linkage between a trait under investigation and a given chromosomal location. The candidate gene approach is much simpler strategy and involves the selection of the gene based on its biological function i.e. insulin secretion or insulin action (Malecki and Klupa, 2005). Using the above mentioned approaches at least 250 genes have been studied for their role in type 2 diabetes (DeFronzo, 1997). Insulin Receptor substrate-1 (Almind et al., 1996; Porzio et al., 1999), glucagon receptor (Hager et al., 1995; Hansen et al., 1996; Lok et al., 1994), sulphonyl urea receptor (SUR) (Hart et al., 1999), peroxisome proliferators activated receptor- γ (PPARG- γ) (Hegele et al., 2000) and peroxisome proliferative activated receptor gamma coactivator 1- α (PGC-1 α) (Ek et al., 2001; Hara et al., 2002) are some of the genes which have shown association with a small percentage of type 2 diabetic subjects in specific populations.

Management

The management of type 2 diabetes include diet and lifestyle modifications. The incidence is considerably reduced by maintaining a body mass index of 25 Kg/m², regular exercise, eating a diet low in saturated fat, trans-fats, glycaemic index and rich in fibre, abstaining from smoking and moderate alcohol consumption (Chen et al., 2011; Hu et al., 2001; Willi et al., 2007; Yoon et al., 2006). Type 2 Diabetes can be controlled by lifestyle modification including proper diet and following a strict and healthy lifestyle (Chiniwala and Jabbour, 2011). If the blood glucose levels are not controlled by modifications in the lifestyle and exercise, pharmacological intervention is needed.

- (a) **Diet Intervention and Physical Activity:** Prevention trials and observational studies provide some evidence on the effects of physical activity on risk of diabetes. However, majority of these studies include both diet and physical activity interventions and isolation of the impact of physical activity is rarely possible (Smith et al., 2016; Yates et al., 2007).
- (b) **Pharmacological Agents:** The pharmacological agents used for the treatment of type 2 diabetes are in the form of oral hypoglycaemic drugs and injectable agents which are discussed below:
 - (i) **Biguanides:** Biguanides are effective hypoglycaemic drugs that suppress hepatic glucose production, increase insulin sensitivity and glucose uptake by skeletal muscles (Collier et al., 2006). Further biguanides also increase fatty acid oxidation (Bruce et al., 2003; Corsini et al., 1974). The most common example of the biguanides is metformin, also known as Glucophage.

Metformin increases peripheral blood glucose uptake mediated through increased translocation of GLUT4 channels resulting from increased activity of AMP-activated protein kinase (AMPK) (Kurth-Kraczek et al., 1999; Musi et al., 2002). It results in lactic acidosis and therefore metformin should be used with caution in elderly diabetic individuals and in conditions that can cause tissue hypoxia such as stroke, pneumonia, myocardial infarction, renal impairment and risk of dehydration (Kim et al., 2015) (Haeusler et al., 2014). Metformin should also be used with caution in weak, underweight and anorexic older individuals (Brown et al., 2003). Metformin use should be limited in elderly having gastrointestinal side-effects and in that case extended release formulation should be released to lower the gastrointestinal symptoms. The risk of developing hypoglycaemia is none to very low (Chiniwala and Jabbour, 2011).

(ii) **Insulin Secretagogues:** Sulphonylureas (SURs) and Meglitinides are the two classes of drugs included in Insulin secretagogues. SURs stimulate endogenous insulin secretion in a glucose independent manner by closing the potassium/ATP channel on the beta cells. This action leads to depolarization of beta cells with a consecutive rise in intracellular calcium that triggers insulin release (Gallwitz, 2009). SURs are the mainstay of treatment of diabetes for last many years in general population due to their efficacy, long experience use and low cost. SURs are generally well tolerated but there is a high risk of developing hypoglycaemia. There is an increased risk of about 36% of developing hypoglycaemia in elderly individuals treated with sulphonylureas compared to younger adults (Neumiller and Setter, 2009; van Staa et al., 1997). This increased hypoglycaemia risk has been found to be associated with age-related renal impairment, co-administration of insulin sensitizers or insulin, recent hospital discharge, age above 60 years, caloric restriction and use of ≥ 5 medications. (Cayea et al., 2007). SURs are hepatically metabolized and excreted renally resulting in older patients with renal and/or hepatic disease being at a higher risk for SUR associated hypoglycaemia. The risk of SURs associated hypoglycaemia in ascending order of likelihood are glimepiride, glipizide, glyburide (Holstein et al., 2001; van Dijk et al., 2017). Glimepiride therefore is considered as the most preferred SUR for older diabetic population. Glyburide is associated with the higher rates of hypoglycaemia compared to glipizide (Shorr et al., 1996) and therefore the use of short-acting glipizide should be preferred and long acting glyburide should be avoided in elderly patients. The Meglitinides popularly called as glinides (include Repaglinide and Nateglinide) are the second class of insulin secretagogues that stimulate the release of insulin from beta cells. They are rapid-acting and have short duration of action (4-6 hours). These medications should be taken before meals and not be taken if the meals are skipped. The occurrence of hypoglycaemia is associated with the glinides, but studies show that the incidence of hypoglycaemia is lower as compared to SUR therapy (Nattrass and Lauritzen, 2000; Papa et al., 2006). The glinides are therefore preferred in elderly patients with postprandial hyperglycaemia and erratic eating habits (Haas, 2005). Repaglinide is excreted via kidneys and mainly metabolized in the liver and thus dose adjustment is not necessary in patients with renal insufficiency except with end stage renal disease. Thus, repaglinide can be considered as an initial therapy in elderly patients with renal impairment in whom metformin and sulphonylureas cannot be tolerated (Marbury et al., 2000).

(iii) **Thiazolidinediones:** Thiazolidinediones (TZDs) are used as monotherapy or in combination with sulphonylurea, metformin or insulin when diet, exercise, and a single agent do not result in adequate glycaemic control (Neumiller and Setter, 2009). TZD class of drugs now includes mainly pioglitazone after the restricted use of rosiglitazone recommended by

Food and Drug Administration (FDA) recently due to increased cardiovascular events reported with rosiglitazone (Chiniwala and Jabbour, 2011). Pioglitazone use is not associated with hypoglycaemia and can be used in renal impairment and thus well tolerated in adults (Chiniwala and Jabbour, 2011). TZDs are generally avoided in patients with congestive heart failure and are absolutely contraindicated in patients with class III or IV heart failure (Nesto et al., 2004). TZDs are also contraindicated in patients with an alanine aminotransferase level >2.5 times the upper limit of normal (Inzucchi, 2002). Rosiglitazone is associated with the development of macular edema and should be avoided in older adults with compromised vision.

- (iv) **Alpha Glucosidase Inhibitors:** α -Glucosidase inhibitors (Acarbose and miglitol) are most effective in the treatment of postprandial hyperglycemia and those consuming high carbohydrate meals (Cayea et al., 2007; Coniff et al., 1995). α -Glucosidase inhibitors competitively inhibit those intestinal enzymes which catalyze the degradation of disaccharides into monosaccharides that are finally absorbed from the small intestine. It is by this way, α -Glucosidase inhibitors slow down the absorption of carbohydrate after a meal and specifically lower postprandial glucose and therefore can be given at any stage (Chiasson et al., 2003; Hanefeld et al., 2004; Lebovitz, 1997). Their use is avoided because of gastrointestinal related adverse side effects (i.e. flatulence and diarrhea). Also, caution should be taken while using α -glucosidase inhibitors in elderly patients taking concurrent prandial insulin or insulin secretagogues placing patients at an increased risk of hypoglycemia. A dose <150 mg of Acarbose per day is recommended for underweight individuals. The use of α -Glucosidase inhibitors is also not recommended in patients with significant renal impairment. Periodic liver enzyme monitoring is warranted in patients taking Acarbose (Haas, 2005).
- (v) **Incretin based therapies:** Incretins are gut hormones that are secreted from enteroendocrine cells into the blood within minutes after eating. These hormones regulate the amount of insulin secreted after eating and thereby help in disposal of the products of digestion (Kim and Egan, 2008). There are two incretins, Glucose-dependent Insulinotropic peptide (GIP); also known as Gastric inhibitory peptide and Glucagon-like peptide-1 (GLP-1). Both these incretins are rapidly deactivated by an enzyme called Dipeptidyl peptidase 4 (DPP4).
- (vi) **GLP-1 Receptor Agonist:** GLP-1 receptor agonist is an incretin based therapy used as an injectable therapy in type 2 diabetes. These incretin based drugs are meant to be used in conjunction with other anti-diabetic drugs wherein patients have trouble in maintaining adequate glycaemic control (Doyle and Egan, 2007). Exenatide is a peptide GLP-1 receptor agonist that was originally isolated from lizard venom and was the first incretin to be approved in 2005. It is resistant to degradation by DPP-4, the major protease that breaks GIP and GLP-1 and, therefore, is more stable. In comparison to DPP-4 inhibitors, weight loss is observed in patients treated with exenatide. Exenatide is also effective in lowering HbA1C in patients who are unable to control it with oral therapy including metformin, sulfonylureas as well as insulin. Therefore, exenatide is advantageous for patients where hypoglycaemia is to be avoided and increased body weight as with insulin therapy is not desirable (Gallwitz, 2009). Liraglutide is another GLP-1 agonist drug, developed in 2010 that is more stable and

has the advantage of once daily dosing using a prefilled pen. The most common side effects of both incretin based drugs are nausea, vomiting and diarrhea, occurring in 10-40% of the treated patients (Buse et al., 2004; Neumiller and Setter, 2009).

- (vii) **Dipeptidyl Peptidase-4 Inhibitors:** Dipeptidyl peptidase-4 (DPP-4) inhibitors inhibit the enzyme dipeptidyl peptidase IV, which cleaves and inactivates incretin hormones glucagon-like peptide 1 (GLP-1) and gastric inhibitory polypeptide; also known as Glucose-dependent Immunotropic peptide (GIP). These hormones are postprandial secreted by endocrine cells in the intestine and stimulate insulin secretion in a glucose-dependent manner (Cayea et al., 2007). They contribute to ~70% of the postprandial insulin secretion. DPP-4 limits the half life period of the above mentioned hormones in only a few minutes after the meal (Gallwitz, 2006). Therefore, DPP-4 action helps in increased secretion of insulin under hyperglycaemic conditions. It also suppresses glucagon secretion and thus lowers hepatic glucose production (Holst, 2006). It further slows gastric emptying and increases satiety.

- (viii) **Pramlintide:** Pramlintide is a synthetic amylin analogue that is administered subcutaneously with insulin and is available as a stable injectable product available for clinical use as Symlin (Thompson et al., 1998). Amylin is a polypeptide that is secreted along with insulin from pancreatic beta cells and has glucose lowering effects in animals and humans (Young, 2005). Amylin suppresses endogenous glucagon production, consequent reduction of postprandial hepatic glucose production. Amylin secretion is diminished or absent in diabetes patients (Hieronymus and Griffin, 2015).

- (ix) **Insulin:** The use of insulin alone or in combination is associated with high risk of weight gain and hypoglycaemia, and therefore, it is utilized with caution in elderly because of fear of hypoglycaemia (Lau et al., 2012). Despite the risk of hypoglycaemia and related events with insulin therapy, most patients with type 2 diabetes eventually require insulin because of irresponsiveness to oral anti-diabetic drugs, loss of beta cell function and the need to meet individualized glycaemic goals (Rosenstock, 2001; Vischer et al., 2009). Precaution should be taken for insulin therapy in older adults because it can lead to hypoglycaemia. The initiation of the use of insulin therapy should be accompanied by proper blood glucose monitoring several times a day to avoid hypoglycaemia. A variety of long and short acting insulin formulations are available that can be used alone or in combination with oral agents. The long acting insulin, glargine and insulin detemir are associated with less nocturnal hypoglycaemia than a moderate acting neutral protamine Hagedorn (NPH) insulin (Cayea et al., 2007).

- (x) **Bile Acid Sequestrants:** Bile acids are amphipathic water soluble steroid-based molecules having an important lipid-solubilizing role in the assimilation of fat. Recently, the glucose lowering role of bile acids via secretion of gut-derived incretin hormone glucagon-like peptide-1 (GLP-1) has been demonstrated (Karhus et al., 2017). Patients with type 2 diabetes generally develop dyslipidemia characterized by elevated triglycerides (TG), decreased HDL-cholesterol and increased LDL-cholesterol. In addition, bile acid and glucose homeostasis is linked and therefore bile acid sequestrants may improve glycemic

control via alterations in the bile acid pool (Staels and Kuipers, 2007). Colesevelam hydrochloride is a specifically engineered bile acid sequestrant that reduces LDL-Cholesterol concentrations in patients with hypercholesterolemia (Insull, 2006; Staels and Kuipers, 2007; Zieve et al., 2007). One of the bile acid sequestrant, cholestyramine has been found to be very effective in decreasing the HbA1c levels in T2D patients (Garg and Grundy, 1994).

Conclusion

Diabetes is a major health issue associated with considerable morbidity. Educating the population is the key to prevent and control this emerging epidemic worldwide. Type 1 diabetes management mainly include insulin therapy whereas the management of type 2 diabetes require a combination of physical workout, oral hypoglycaemic drugs and insulin. Glycaemic management should include a careful consideration of adverse effects of drugs, drug-drug interaction and the risk of hypoglycaemia. Older patients often have renal and/or hepatic complexities and making selection of the appropriate drug is a challenging job. The overall focus is to improve the quality of the life, reduce the risk of hypoglycaemia and diabetes related complications in the patients suffering from diabetes.

References

- Abate, N., and Chandalia, M., 2001, Ethnicity and type 2 diabetes: focus on Asian Indians, *J Diabetes Complications* 15(6):320-7.
- Almind, K., Inoue, G., Pedersen, O., and Kahn, C. R., 1996, A common amino acid polymorphism in insulin receptor substrate-1 causes impaired insulin signaling. Evidence from transfection studies, *J Clin Invest* 97(11):2569-75.
- Bach, J. F., 1994, Insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus as an autoimmune disease, *Endocr Rev* 15(4):516-42.
- Bell, D. S., 1996, Alcohol and the NIDDM patient, *Diabetes Care* 19(5):509-13.
- Berlin, I., 2008, Smoking-induced metabolic disorders: a review, *Diabetes Metab* 34(4 Pt 1):307-14.
- Bollheimer, L. C., Skelly, R. H., Chester, M. W., McGarry, J. D., and Rhodes, C. J., 1998, Chronic exposure to free fatty acid reduces pancreatic beta cell insulin content by increasing basal insulin secretion that is not compensated for by a corresponding increase in proinsulin biosynthesis translation, *J Clin Invest* 101(5):1094-101.
- Brown, A. F., Mangione, C. M., Saliba, D., and Sarkisian, C. A., 2003, Guidelines for improving the care of the older person with diabetes mellitus, *J Am Geriatr Soc* 51(5 Suppl Guidelines):S265-80.
- Bruce, C. R., Anderson, M. J., Carey, A. L., Newman, D. G., Bonen, A., Kriketos, A. D., Cooney, G. J., and Hawley, J. A., 2003, Muscle oxidative capacity is a better predictor of insulin sensitivity than lipid status, *J Clin Endocrinol Metab* 88(11):5444-51.
- Burke, V., Lee, A. H., Hunter, E., Spargo, R., Smith, R., Beilin, L. J., and Puddey, I. B., 2007, Alcohol intake and incidence of coronary disease in Australian aborigines, *Alcohol Alcohol* 42(2):119-24.
- Buse, J. B., Henry, R. R., Han, J., Kim, D. D., Fineman, M. S., and Baron, A. D., 2004, Effects of exenatide (exendin-4) on glycemic control over 30 weeks in sulfonylurea-treated patients with type 2 diabetes, *Diabetes Care* 27(11):2628-35.
- Carmelli, D., Cardon, L. R., and Fabsitz, R., 1994, Clustering of hypertension, diabetes, and obesity in

adult male twins: same genes or same environments?, *Am J Hum Genet* 55(3):566-73.

Cayea, D., Boyd, C., and Durso, S. C., 2007, Individualising therapy for older adults with diabetes mellitus, *Drugs Aging* 24(10):851-63.

Chandalia, M., Abate, N., Garg, A., Stray-Gundersen, J., and Grundy, S. M., 1999, Relationship between generalized and upper body obesity to insulin resistance in Asian Indian men, *J Clin Endocrinol Metab* 84(7):2329-35.

Chen, L., Magliano, D. J., and Zimmet, P. Z., 2011, The worldwide epidemiology of type 2 diabetes mellitus--present and future perspectives, *Nat Rev Endocrinol* 8(4):228-36.

Chiasson, J. L., Josse, R. G., Gomis, R., Hanefeld, M., Karasik, A., and Laakso, M., 2003, Acarbose treatment and the risk of cardiovascular disease and hypertension in patients with impaired glucose tolerance: the STOP-NIDDM trial, *JAMA* 290(4):486-94.

Chiniwala, N., and Jabbour, S., 2011, Management of diabetes mellitus in the elderly, *Curr Opin Endocrinol Diabetes Obes* 18(2):148-52.

Collier, C. A., Bruce, C. R., Smith, A. C., Lopaschuk, G., and Dyck, D. J., 2006, Metformin counters the insulin-induced suppression of fatty acid oxidation and stimulation of triacylglycerol storage in rodent skeletal muscle, *Am J Physiol Endocrinol Metab* 291(1):E182-9.

Coniff, R. F., Shapiro, J. A., Seaton, T. B., and Bray, G. A., 1995, Multicenter, placebo-controlled trial comparing acarbose (BAY g 5421) with placebo, tolbutamide, and tolbutamide-plus-acarbose in non-insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus, *Am J Med* 98(5):443-51.

Corsini, G. U., Sirigu, F., Tagliamonte, P., and Muntoni, S., 1974, Effects of biguanides on fatty acid and glucose oxidation in muscle, *Pharmacol Res Commun* 6(3):253-61.

DeFronzo, R. A., 1997, Insulin resistance: a multifaceted syndrome responsible for NIDDM, obesity, hypertension, dyslipidaemia and atherosclerosis, *Neth J Med* 50(5):191-7.

Doria, A., 2000, Methods for the study of the genetic determinants of diabetes and its complications, *Przegl Lek* 57 Suppl 3:7-12.

Doyle, M. E., and Egan, J. M., 2007, Mechanisms of action of glucagon-like peptide 1 in the pancreas, *Pharmacol Ther* 113(3):546-93.

Ek, J., Andersen, G., Urhammer, S. A., Gaede, P. H., Drivsholm, T., Borch-Johnsen, K., Hansen, T., and Pedersen, O., 2001, Mutation analysis of peroxisome proliferator-activated receptor-gamma coactivator-1 (PGC-1) and relationships of identified amino acid polymorphisms to Type II diabetes mellitus, *Diabetologia* 44(12):2220-6.

El-Tantawy, W. H., and Temraz, A., 2018, Management of diabetes using herbal extracts: review, *Arch Physiol Biochem* 124(5):383-389.

- Forouhi, N. G., and Wareham, N. J., 2014, Epidemiology of diabetes, *Medicine* (Abingdon) 42(12):698-702.
- Froguel, P., and Velho, G., 2001, Genetic determinants of type 2 diabetes, *Recent Prog Horm Res* 56:91-105.
- Gallwitz, B., 2006, Exenatide in type 2 diabetes: treatment effects in clinical studies and animal study data, *Int J Clin Pract* 60(12):1654-61.
- Gallwitz, B., 2009, Implications of postprandial glucose and weight control in people with type 2 diabetes: understanding and implementing the International Diabetes Federation guidelines, *Diabetes Care* 32 Suppl 2:S322-5.
- Garg, A., and Grundy, S. M., 1994, Cholestyramine therapy for dyslipidemia in non-insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus. A short-term, double-blind, crossover trial, *Ann Intern Med* 121(6):416-22.
- Groop, L., Forsblom, C., Lehtovirta, M., Tuomi, T., Karanko, S., Nissen, M., Ehrnstrom, B. O., Forsen, B., Isomaa, B., Snickars, B., and Taskinen, M. R., 1996, Metabolic consequences of a family history of NIDDM (the Botnia study): evidence for sex-specific parental effects, *Diabetes* 45(11):1585-93.
- Haas, L., 2005, Management of diabetes mellitus medications in the nursing home, *Drugs Aging* 22(3):209-18.
- Haeusler, S., Parry-Strong, A., and Krebs, J. D., 2014, The prevalence of low vitamin B12 status in people with type 2 diabetes receiving metformin therapy in New Zealand--a clinical audit, *N Z Med J* 127(1404):8-16.
- Hager, J., Hansen, L., Vaisse, C., Vionnet, N., Philippi, A., Poller, W., Velho, G., Carcassi, C., Contu, L., Julier, C., and et al., 1995, A missense mutation in the glucagon receptor gene is associated with non-insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus, *Nat Genet* 9(3):299-304.
- Hanefeld, M., Cagatay, M., Petrowitsch, T., Neuser, D., Petzinna, D., and Rupp, M., 2004, Acarbose reduces the risk for myocardial infarction in type 2 diabetic patients: meta-analysis of seven long-term studies, *Eur Heart J* 25(1):10-6.
- Hansen, L. H., Abrahamsen, N., Hager, J., Jelinek, L., Kindsvogel, W., Froguel, P., and Nishimura, E., 1996, The Gly40Ser mutation in the human glucagon receptor gene associated with NIDDM results in a receptor with reduced sensitivity to glucagon, *Diabetes* 45(6):725-30.
- Hara, K., Tobe, K., Okada, T., Kadowaki, H., Akanuma, Y., Ito, C., Kimura, S., and Kadowaki, T., 2002, A genetic variation in the PGC-1 gene could confer insulin resistance and susceptibility to Type II diabetes, *Diabetologia* 45(5):740-3.
- Hart, L. M., de Knijff, P., Dekker, J. M., Stolk, R. P., Nijpels, G., van der Does, F. E., Ruige, J. B.,

- Grobbee, D. E., Heine, R. J., and Maassen, J. A., 1999, Variants in the sulphonylurea receptor gene: association of the exon 16-3t variant with Type II diabetes mellitus in Dutch Caucasians, *Diabetologia* 42(5):617-20.
- Hegele, R. A., Cao, H., Harris, S. B., Zinman, B., Hanley, A. J., and Anderson, C. M., 2000, Peroxisome proliferator-activated receptor-gamma2 P12A and type 2 diabetes in Canadian Oji-Cree, *J Clin Endocrinol Metab* 85(5):2014-9.
- Hieronymus, L., and Griffin, S., 2015, Role of Amylin in Type 1 and Type 2 Diabetes, *Diabetes Educ* 41(1 Suppl):47S-56S.
- Holst, J. J., 2006, Glucagon-like peptide-1: from extract to agent. The Claude Bernard Lecture, 2005, *Diabetologia* 49(2):253-60.
- Holstein, A., Plaschke, A., and Egberts, E. H., 2001, Lower incidence of severe hypoglycaemia in patients with type 2 diabetes treated with glimepiride versus glibenclamide, *Diabetes Metab Res Rev* 17(6):467-73.
- Hotamisligil, G. S., Shargill, N. S., and Spiegelman, B. M., 1993, Adipose expression of tumor necrosis factor-alpha: direct role in obesity-linked insulin resistance, *Science* 259(5091):87-91.
- Hu, F. B., Manson, J. E., Stampfer, M. J., Colditz, G., Liu, S., Solomon, C. G., and Willett, W. C., 2001, Diet, lifestyle, and the risk of type 2 diabetes mellitus in women, *N Engl J Med* 345(11):790-7.
- Insull, W., Jr., 2006, Clinical utility of bile acid sequestrants in the treatment of dyslipidemia: a scientific review, *South Med J* 99(3):257-73.
- Inzucchi, S. E., 2002, Oral antihyperglycemic therapy for type 2 diabetes: scientific review, *JAMA* 287(3):360-72.
- Joshi, S. R., 2003, Metabolic syndrome--emerging clusters of the Indian phenotype, *J Assoc Physicians India* 51:445-6.
- Kaprio, J., Tuomilehto, J., Koskenvuo, M., Romanov, K., Reunanen, A., Eriksson, J., Stengard, J., and Kesaniemi, Y. A., 1992, Concordance for type 1 (insulin-dependent) and type 2 (non-insulin-dependent) diabetes mellitus in a population-based cohort of twins in Finland, *Diabetologia* 35(11):1060-7.
- Karhus, M. L., Bronden, A., Sonne, D. P., Vilsboll, T., and Knop, F. K., 2017, Evidence connecting old, new and neglected glucose-lowering drugs to bile acid-induced GLP-1 secretion: A review, *Diabetes Obes Metab* 19(9):1214-1222.
- Kim, M. J., Han, J. Y., Shin, J. Y., Kim, S. I., Lee, J. M., Hong, S., Kim, S. H., Nam, M. S., and Kim, Y. S., 2015, Metformin-associated lactic acidosis: predisposing factors and outcome, *Endocrinol Metab (Seoul)* 30(1):78-83.

Diabetes mellitus: Risk factors, Diagnosis and Management, a Review

- Kim, W., and Egan, J. M., 2008, The role of incretins in glucose homeostasis and diabetes treatment, *Pharmacol Rev* 60(4):470-512.
- King, H., Aubert, R. E., and Herman, W. H., 1998, Global burden of diabetes, 1995-2025: prevalence, numerical estimates, and projections, *Diabetes Care* 21(9):1414-31.
- Kobberling, J., 1982, [Predictive value of diagnostic procedures], *Dtsch Med Wochenschr* 107(15):591-5.
- Kurth-Kraczek, E. J., Hirshman, M. F., Goodyear, L. J., and Winder, W. W., 1999, 5' AMP-activated protein kinase activation causes GLUT4 translocation in skeletal muscle, *Diabetes* 48(8):1667-71.
- Lau, A. N., Tang, T., Halapy, H., Thorpe, K., and Yu, C. H., 2012, Initiating insulin in patients with type 2 diabetes, *CMAJ* 184(7):767-76.
- Lebovitz, H. E., 1997, alpha-Glucosidase inhibitors, *Endocrinol Metab Clin North Am* 26(3):539-51.
- Leslie, R. D., Williams, R., and Pozzilli, P., 2006, Clinical review: Type 1 diabetes and latent autoimmune diabetes in adults: one end of the rainbow, *J Clin Endocrinol Metab* 91(5):1654-9.
- Lok, S., Kuijper, J. L., Jelinek, L. J., Kramer, J. M., Whitmore, T. E., Sprecher, C. A., Mathewes, S., Grant, F. J., Biggs, S. H., Rosenberg, G. B., and et al., 1994, The human glucagon receptor encoding gene: structure, cDNA sequence and chromosomal localization, *Gene* 140(2):203-9.
- Malecki, M. T., and Klupa, T., 2005, Type 2 diabetes mellitus: from genes to disease, *Pharmacol Rep* 57 Suppl:20-32.
- Marbury, T. C., Ruckle, J. L., Hatorp, V., Andersen, M. P., Nielsen, K. K., Huang, W. C., and Strange, P., 2000, Pharmacokinetics of repaglinide in subjects with renal impairment, *Clin Pharmacol Ther* 67(1):7-15.
- McCarthy, M. I., and Froguel, P., 2002, Genetic approaches to the molecular understanding of type 2 diabetes, *Am J Physiol Endocrinol Metab* 283(2):E217-25.
- McKeigue, P. M., Shah, B., and Marmot, M. G., 1991, Relation of central obesity and insulin resistance with high diabetes prevalence and cardiovascular risk in South Asians, *Lancet* 337(8738):382-6.
- Misra, A., Alappan, N. K., Vikram, N. K., Goel, K., Gupta, N., Mittal, K., Bhatt, S., and Luthra, K., 2008, Effect of supervised progressive resistance-exercise training protocol on insulin sensitivity, glycemia, lipids, and body composition in Asian Indians with type 2 diabetes, *Diabetes Care* 31(7):1282-7.
- Moran, A., Zhang, H. J., Olson, L. K., Harmon, J. S., Poitout, V., and Robertson, R. P., 1997, Differentiation of glucose toxicity from beta cell exhaustion during the evolution of defective insulin gene expression in the pancreatic islet cell line, HIT-T15, *J Clin Invest* 99(3):534-9.

- Musi, N., Hirshman, M. F., Nygren, J., Svanfeldt, M., Bavenholm, P., Rooyackers, O., Zhou, G., Williamson, J. M., Ljunqvist, O., Efendic, S., Moller, D. E., Thorell, A., and Goodyear, L. J., 2002, Metformin increases AMP-activated protein kinase activity in skeletal muscle of subjects with type 2 diabetes, *Diabetes* 51(7):2074-81.
- Nattrass, M., and Lauritzen, T., 2000, Review of prandial glucose regulation with repaglinide: a solution to the problem of hypoglycaemia in the treatment of Type 2 diabetes?, *Int J Obes Relat Metab Disord* 24 Suppl 3:S21-31.
- Nesto, R. W., Bell, D., Bonow, R. O., Fonseca, V., Grundy, S. M., Horton, E. S., Le Winter, M., Porte, D., Semenkovich, C. F., Smith, S., Young, L. H., and Kahn, R., 2004, Thiazolidinedione use, fluid retention, and congestive heart failure: a consensus statement from the American Heart Association and American Diabetes Association, *Diabetes Care* 27(1):256-63.
- Neumiller, J. J., and Setter, S. M., 2009, Pharmacologic management of the older patient with type 2 diabetes mellitus, *Am J Geriatr Pharmacother* 7(6):324-42.
- Newman, B., Selby, J. V., King, M. C., Slemenda, C., Fabsitz, R., and Friedman, G. D., 1987, Concordance for type 2 (non-insulin-dependent) diabetes mellitus in male twins, *Diabetologia* 30(10):763-8.
- Pan, X. R., Li, G. W., Hu, Y. H., Wang, J. X., Yang, W. Y., An, Z. X., Hu, Z. X., Lin, J., Xiao, J. Z., Cao, H. B., Liu, P. A., Jiang, X. G., Jiang, Y. Y., Wang, J. P., Zheng, H., Zhang, H., Bennett, P. H., and Howard, B. V., 1997, Effects of diet and exercise in preventing NIDDM in people with impaired glucose tolerance. The Da Qing IGT and Diabetes Study, *Diabetes Care* 20(4):537-44.
- Papa, G., Fedele, V., Rizzo, M. R., Fioravanti, M., Leotta, C., Solerte, S. B., Purrello, F., and Paolisso, G., 2006, Safety of type 2 diabetes treatment with repaglinide compared with glibenclamide in elderly people: A randomized, open-label, two-period, cross-over trial, *Diabetes Care* 29(8):1918-20.
- Porzio, O., Federici, M., Hribal, M. L., Lauro, D., Accili, D., Lauro, R., Borboni, P., and Sesti, G., 1999, The Gly972-->Arg amino acid polymorphism in IRS-1 impairs insulin secretion in pancreatic beta cells, *J Clin Invest* 104(3):357-64.
- Raji, A., Seely, E. W., Arky, R. A., and Simonson, D. C., 2001, Body fat distribution and insulin resistance in healthy Asian Indians and Caucasians, *J Clin Endocrinol Metab* 86(11):5366-71.
- Ramachandran, A., Snehalatha, C., Kapur, A., Vijay, V., Mohan, V., Das, A. K., Rao, P. V., Yajnik, C. S., Prasanna Kumar, K. M., and Nair, J. D., 2001, High prevalence of diabetes and impaired glucose tolerance in India: National Urban Diabetes Survey, *Diabetologia* 44(9):1094-101.
- Ramachandran, A., Snehalatha, C., Viswanathan, V., Viswanathan, M., and Haffner, S. M., 1997, Risk of noninsulin dependent diabetes mellitus conferred by obesity and central adiposity in different ethnic groups: a comparative analysis between Asian Indians, Mexican Americans and Whites, *Diabetes Res Clin Pract* 36(2):121-5.

- Rosenstock, J., 2001, Management of type 2 diabetes mellitus in the elderly: special considerations, *Drugs Aging* 18(1):31-44.
- Sayeed, M. A., Mahtab, H., Latif, Z. A., Khanam, P. A., Ahsan, K. A., Banu, A., and Azad Khan, A. K., 2003, Waist-to-height ratio is a better obesity index than body mass index and waist-to-hip ratio for predicting diabetes, hypertension and lipidemia, *Bangladesh Med Res Counc Bull* 29(1):1-10.
- Shera, A. S., Rafique, G., Khawaja, I. A., Baqai, S., and King, H., 1999, Pakistan National Diabetes Survey: prevalence of glucose intolerance and associated factors in Baluchistan province, *Diabetes Res Clin Pract* 44(1):49-58.
- Shimabukuro, M., Zhou, Y. T., Levi, M., and Unger, R. H., 1998, Fatty acid-induced beta cell apoptosis: a link between obesity and diabetes, *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 95(5):2498-502.
- Shorr, R. I., Ray, W. A., Daugherty, J. R., and Griffin, M. R., 1996, Individual sulfonylureas and serious hypoglycemia in older people, *J Am Geriatr Soc* 44(7):751-5.
- Smith, A. D., Crippa, A., Woodcock, J., and Brage, S., 2016, Physical activity and incident type 2 diabetes mellitus: a systematic review and dose-response meta-analysis of prospective cohort studies, *Diabetologia* 59(12):2527-2545.
- Snehalatha, C., Ramachandran, A., Satyavani, K., Vallabi, M. Y., and Viswanathan, V., 1997, Computed axial tomographic scan measurement of abdominal fat distribution and its correlation with anthropometry and insulin secretion in healthy Asian Indians, *Metabolism* 46(10):1220-4.
- Staels, B., and Kuipers, F., 2007, Bile acid sequestrants and the treatment of type 2 diabetes mellitus, *Drugs* 67(10):1383-92.
- Stumvoll, M., Goldstein, B. J., and van Haeften, T. W., 2005, Type 2 diabetes: principles of pathogenesis and therapy, *Lancet* 365(9467):1333-46.
- Thompson, R. G., Pearson, L., Schoenfeld, S. L., and Kolterman, O. G., 1998, Pramlintide, a synthetic analog of human amylin, improves the metabolic profile of patients with type 2 diabetes using insulin. The Pramlintide in Type 2 Diabetes Group, *Diabetes Care* 21(6):987-93.
- Tuomilehto, J., Lindstrom, J., Eriksson, J. G., Valle, T. T., Hamalainen, H., Ilanne-Parikka, P., Keinanen-Kiukaanniemi, S., Laakso, M., Louheranta, A., Rastas, M., Salminen, V., and Uusitupa, M., 2001, Prevention of type 2 diabetes mellitus by changes in lifestyle among subjects with impaired glucose tolerance, *N Engl J Med* 344(18):1343-50.
- Unger, R. H., 1995, Lipotoxicity in the pathogenesis of obesity-dependent NIDDM. Genetic and clinical implications, *Diabetes* 44(8):863-70.
- Uysal, K. T., Wiesbrock, S. M., Marino, M. W., and Hotamisligil, G. S., 1997, Protection from obesity-induced insulin resistance in mice lacking TNF-alpha function, *Nature* 389(6651):610-4.

- van Dam, R. M., Rimm, E. B., Willett, W. C., Stampfer, M. J., and Hu, F. B., 2002, Dietary patterns and risk for type 2 diabetes mellitus in U.S. men, *Ann Intern Med* 136(3):201-9.
- van Dijk, P., Bouma, A., Landman, G. W., Groenier, K. H., Bilo, H., Kleefstra, N., and van Hateren, K. J., 2017, Hypoglycemia in Frail Elderly Patients With Type 2 Diabetes Mellitus Treated With Sulfonylurea, *J Diabetes Sci Technol* 11(2):438-439.
- van Staa, T., Abenhaim, L., and Monette, J., 1997, Rates of hypoglycemia in users of sulfonylureas, *J Clin Epidemiol* 50(6):735-41.
- Vischer, U. M., Bauduceau, B., Bourdel-Marchasson, I., Blicke, J. F., Constans, T., Fagot-Campagna, A., Kaloustian, E., Lassman-Vague, V., Lecomte, P., Simon, D., Tessier, D., Verny, C., and Doucet, J., 2009, A call to incorporate the prevention and treatment of geriatric disorders in the management of diabetes in the elderly, *Diabetes Metab* 35(3):168-77.
- Wannamethee, S. G., Camargo, C. A., Jr., Manson, J. E., Willett, W. C., and Rimm, E. B., 2003, Alcohol drinking patterns and risk of type 2 diabetes mellitus among younger women, *Arch Intern Med* 163(11):1329-36.
- Wellen, K. E., and Hotamisligil, G. S., 2005, Inflammation, stress, and diabetes, *J Clin Invest* 115(5):1111-9.
- Willi, C., Bodenmann, P., Ghali, W. A., Faris, P. D., and Cornuz, J., 2007, Active smoking and the risk of type 2 diabetes: a systematic review and meta-analysis, *JAMA* 298(22):2654-64.
- Yates, T., Khunti, K., Bull, F., Gorely, T., and Davies, M. J., 2007, The role of physical activity in the management of impaired glucose tolerance: a systematic review, *Diabetologia* 50(6):1116-26.
- Yoon, K. H., Lee, J. H., Kim, J. W., Cho, J. H., Choi, Y. H., Ko, S. H., Zimmet, P., and Son, H. Y., 2006, Epidemic obesity and type 2 diabetes in Asia, *Lancet* 368(9548):1681-8.
- Young, A., 2005, Tissue expression and secretion of amylin, *Adv Pharmacol* 52:19-45.
- Zieve, F. J., Kalin, M. F., Schwartz, S. L., Jones, M. R., and Bailey, W. L., 2007, Results of the glucose-lowering effect of WelChol study (GLOWS): a randomized, double-blind, placebo-controlled pilot study evaluating the effect of colesevelam hydrochloride on glycemic control in subjects with type 2 diabetes, *Clin Ther* 29(1):74-83.

Characterization of *Picea smithiana* (Wall.) Boiss essential oil and its antibacterial effect against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus sample

Ajay Kumar*, Sahil Gupta**, Shashi S. Sharma*** and Madhulika Bhagat****

ABSTRACT

The increasing resistance of microorganisms to conventional chemicals and drugs becoming a serious concern worldwide has prompted research into the identification of new antimicrobials with broad activity. In the present study essential oil of *Picea smithiana*(needles) was explored for antimicrobial potential. The GC-MS analysis of the essential oil indicated the presence of high content of monoterpene compounds such as α -pinene (38.82%), β -pinene (7.41%), Camphene (7.75%) as its major components, while examining for antibacterial activity against eight reference strain, growth inhibition in range 14 to 7 mm was observed against most of the reference strain used in the study. Further, strong antibacterial potential of essential oil against an opportunistic pathogen *S. aureus* (isolated from the clinical pus samples) was observed with minimum inhibition concentration (MIC) 0.125 μ g/ml, the effect of positive controls that were used against pathogen *S. aureus* in the hospitals were found less effective in comparison to the essential oil tested. Thus, results indicate essential oil of *Picea smithiana* (needles) have potential as antimicrobial and might be exploited as natural antibiotic for the treatment of infectious diseases.

Keywords: GC-MS, *Picea smithiana*, essential oil, antibacterial, clinical pathogen

Introduction

Antimicrobial resistance is becoming one of the most serious public health threats that results mostly from the selective pressure exerted by antibiotic use and abuse [1]. According to the World Health Organization (WHO) infectious diseases are the second cause of death around the world and the deaths are expected to rise 83 million in 2050 [2]. The fast advancement and spread of obstruction among clinically critical bacterial species have been watched as of late because of abuse of the antimicrobials, prompting shortened impacts of existing antimicrobial agents [3,4]. Subsequently, the helpful alternatives for the treatment of diseases have turned out to be constrained or even inaccessible. In this way, it is important to develop new substitute compounds to diminish the issue of the microbial resistance.

Plants produce an enormous array of functional relevant secondary metabolites (phytochemicals) like alkaloids, terpenoids, flavonoids, phenols, saponins etc., that are responsible for exhibiting diverse array of therapeutic properties[5,6]. Essential oils (also known as volatile oils) are products of the secondary metabolism of aromatic plants and have been traditionally used as well as explored in recent times and also exploited to investigate their potential role for efficacy to combat the problems of antibiotic resistance in bacteria [7].

* Research Scholar, School of Biotechnology, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

** Research Scholar, School of Biotechnology, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

*** Head, Department of Microbiology, Government Medical College, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

**** Sr. Asstt. Prof., School of Biotechnology, University of Jammu, Jammu, India (corresponding author)

Picea smithiana (Wall.) Boiss (Family: Pinaceae) locally known as Indian Spruce, Morinda Spruce or Sal, is found at an altitude of 2400-3600 m of Himalayan range. It is an evergreen tree, growing to 30 m (98ft) by 6 m (19ft) at a slow rate, having cone shaped crown of pendulous branchlets (pale dark brown to pale gray), bark are brownish in color, breaking into asymmetrical plates, leaves are slender, curved and spreading radially in forward direction whereas seed cones are green, maturing brown, lustrous, cylindric also with dark brown seeds. The species is monoecious (individual flowers are either male or female, but both sexes can be found on the same plant) and are pollinated by wind. This plant cannot grow in the shade. It prefers moist soil, tolerates strong winds but not maritime exposure. It cannot tolerate atmospheric pollution. Commercially, used as timber for construction (bark is very water resistant and is used for roofing and making water troughs), used in the pulp industry to make paper, as fuel (yields a fairly good charcoal). Sometime used as emergency food when rest is failed, as food additive inner bark - dried, ground into powder to thicken soups etc., or added to cereals when making bread food. The young cones are utilized for flavoring. Essential oil of the plant is used for fragrance purposes, especially as room spray, deodorants. [8] In the present study, characterization and antimicrobial potential of the essential oil of *Picea smithiana* (needles) against clinically isolated *S. aureus* from pus abscess would be evaluated.

Methodologies

Collection of Plant material was done from Chattergala, Bhaderwaha, Jammu region and it was identified by taxonomist of Department of Botany, University of Jammu, Jammu (J&K), and allotted Accession no is 14613. Essential oil was isolated from hydro-distillation method on Clevenger type apparatus. Isolated oil was dried over anhydrous sodium sulphate and stored at low temperature for further use.

GC-MS analysis

Characterization of essential oil was carried out at Indian Institute of Integrative Medicine (CSIR, India), Canal Road, Jammu, India. Standard protocol as described in literature was followed and components were compared by contrasting their mass spectra and those of NIST05 (version 2.0) library [9, 23].

Antibacterial assay

Initial screening for antibacterial activity was carried out by agar well diffusion assay against Gram positive (four) and Gram negative (four) strains. In this method nutrient agar (20ml) was inoculated with 100 µl bacterial suspension (10⁸ CFU/ml) and poured in sterilized petri plate. Essential oil (20µl) dissolved in DMSO was added into each well (6mm) and kept for incubation at 37°C for 24h. Data was compared with Chloramphenicol (10 µg) as positive reference [10,23].

Isolation and antibacterial effect of essential oil against pus clinical isolates

A total of 10 bacterial isolates which include *Staphylococcus aureus* (n=10) from human skin lesion (pus cultures) were isolated in the Department of Microbiology, Govt. Medical College, Jammu, India. Pus samples from patients were cultured on Nutrient agar for the recovery *Staphylococcus aureus*. Antibacterial activity of essential oil was carried out by agar well diffusion method. Sterilized Mueller Hinton agar (20ml) were poured in the petri-plate and inoculated with 100µl bacterial suspension whose turbidity was compared with 0.5 McFarland standard. Essential oil mixed with

Characterization of *Picea smithiana* (Wall.) Boiss essential oil and its antibacterial effect against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus sample

DMSO in the ratio of 1:1 in the quantity of 20 μ l was loaded in the wells. Four different types of antibiotics were used as positive reference. The plates then incubated at 37 °C for 24 hour. Microbial growth was then determined by measuring zone of inhibition and further minimum inhibitory concentration (MIC) was calculated.

Results and discussion

Increasing resistance of pathogens toward antibiotics remains the major threat to public health as it leads to the reduced affectivity of antibiotic treatment in clinical scenario. The chemical drugs available possess the serious side effects to the individuals, hence use of plant based products as remedy against various infections remains the choice treatment in modern world. Likewise, there are numerous conceivable favorable circumstances of natural products as antimicrobial compounds, for example, less antagonistic impacts, better patient resilience, moderately economical, sustainability and biodegradability [11,19,20]. This study was planned to evaluate such potential of a high altitude plant *Picea smithiana* (needles) essential oil as probable source of antimicrobial infections. Here, essential oil was obtained by hydro-distillation of *Picea smithiana* (fresh needles) that yielded 0.77% of pale yellow colored essential oil. Total twenty seven compounds were identified by Gas Chromatography and Mass Spectrometry (GC-MS), majority of compounds were monoterpenes in essential oil, with α -pinene as major compound (38.01%) followed by β -pinene (7.32%), camphene (6.91%), β -phellandrene (5.35%) etc. (Table 1). These results were in concurrence with Sharma and coworker where they also found high extent of monoterpenes in *P. smithiana* essential oil [12]. Further, effectiveness as antibacterial agent of *P. smithiana* essential oil was initially measured against various bacterial strains (Four Gram positive and four Gram negative bacteria) procured from MTCC, Chandigarh (Table 2) as reference. Here, strong inhibition of growth (upto 10 mm zone of inhibition) was observed against *Bacillus subtilis*, *Pseudomonas alcaligenes* and *Staphylococcus aureus* and moderate activity against *Campylobacter coli*, *Enterococcus fecalis*, *Pseudomonas aeruginosa*, *Bacillus cereus* and *Alcaligenes denitrificans* was observed (Table 2). The microcidal activity was also observed by several species of *Picea* viz., essential oil of *Picea abies* demonstrated antibacterial as well as anti-candida activity, while *Picea excelsa* essential oil showed antibacterial potential against *Listeria ivanovii*, *Listeria monocytogenes* and *Staphylococcus aureus* [13, 21].

Effective results was observed from *P. smithiana* essential oil as antimicrobial agent in laboratory setup against reference strain procured by MTCC, this lead us to find its potential as antibacterial agent against the clinically isolated pathogenic strain *Staphylococcus aureus* by skin abscession (pus). *Staphylococcus aureus* a Gram-positive bacterium pathogen colonizes in skin, nails and further disseminate among recipient host populations via physical contact and aerosols. Treatment against *Staphylococcus* remains an open challenge that leads to origin opportunistic infection of skin and soft tissue abscesses (Pus formation) in open wound. The massive consumption of antibiotics had contributed to develop the resistance of *Staphylococcus aureus* and ultimately to overcome the MRSA [14,22]. Hence, keeping in view the seriousness of the issue *Picea smithiana* essential oil was evaluated for its effectiveness against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus abscesses. The essential oil found to be very effective with MIC value of 0.125 μ l/ml, whereas same isolated strain of *Staphylococcus aureus* was found to be resistant against several of antibiotics (Table 3). The effectivity of *Picea smithiana* essential oil may be due to several phyto-constituents present in it, these constituents have earlier also demonstrated antimicrobial activity for example, α -pinene [15], β -pinene [16], β -phellandrene [17] are well known for their antimicrobial potential thus, validating

the use of exudates from this plant to treat burns, wounds, and infections. Not only the major constituents but these activity may also be correlated to other minor components that might either underline or even increase the activity of the major chemical constituents present in the essential oils in synergistic mechanism. [18] However, *in vitro* studies on the essential oil of *Picea smithiana* as potent antimicrobial agent is established and that may be related to the various phyto-constituents but the exact mechanism through which *Picea smithiana* exert their antimicrobial activity is not clear and should be further investigated.

Conclusion

Essential oil of *Picea smithiana* needles showed significant inhibitory activity against wide range of bacterial strains as well as clinically isolated pathogenic strain *Staphylococcus aureus* by skin abscession (pus). Presence of high content of α -pinene and β -pinene in essential oil may be considered as possible sources for the development of new antimicrobial agents, and can be explored in synergy with currently available antimicrobials.

Conflict of interest

The authors have no conflict of interest regarding this paper.

Acknowledgments

Authors would like to acknowledge the UGC-SAP, DST-FIST, RUSA and Department of Bio-informatics, University of Jammu, for providing facilities and support to conduct this study.

References

1. Bérdy J. Thoughts and facts about antibiotics: where we are now and where we are heading. *Journal of Antibiotics*. 2012;65: 385395.
2. World Health Organization. 2013. Mortality and global health estimates. Geneva, Switzerland: World Health Organization.
3. David MZ, Daum RS. Community-associated methicillin-resistant *Staphylococcus aureus*: epidemiology and clinical consequences of an emerging epidemic. *Clinical Microbiology Reviews*. 2010;23:616687.
4. CDC (Center for Disease Control and Prevention CDC) Antibiotic/Antimicrobial Resistance. 2013.
5. Croft KD. The chemistry and biological effects of flavonoids and phenolic acids. *Annals of New York Academy of Sciences*. 1998; 854: 435-442.
6. Pietta PG. Flavonoids as antioxidants. *Journal of Natural Products*. 2000; 63:1035-1042.
7. Dorman HJD and Deans SG. Antimicrobial agents from plants volatile oils. *Journal of Applied Microbiology*. 2000; 88: 308-316

Characterization of *Picea smithiana* (Wall.) Boiss essential oil and its antibacterial effect against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus sample

8. Conifer Specialist Group (1998) IUCN Red List of Threatened species, IUCN 2006.
9. Adams R. Identification of essential oil components by gas chromatography/mass spectrometry (4th Edition) Allured Publishing Corporation, Carol Stream, IL, USA 2007.
10. Foroughi A, Pournaghi P, Zhaleh M, Zangeneh A, Zangeneh MM, Moradi R. Antibacterial activity and phytochemical screening of essential oil of *Foeniculum vulgare*. *Inter J Pharm Clin Res*. 2016;8:1505-9.
11. Abu-Shanab B, Adwan G, Jarrar N, Abu-Hijleh A, Adwan K. Antibacterial activity of four plant extracts used in Palestine in folkloric medicine against methicillin-resistant *Staphylococcus aureus*. *Turk J Boil*. 2006;30:195-8.
12. Sharma S, Bhatt V, Kumar N, Singha B, Sharma U. Locational comparison of essential oils from selected conifers of Himachal Pradesh. *Natural Product Research*. 2017; 31, 578-1582.
13. Canillac N and Mourey A. Antibacterial activity of the essential oil of *Picea excelsa* on *Listeria*, *Staphylococcus aureus* and coliform bacteria. *Food Microbiology*. 2001; 18: 261-268.
14. Espadinha D, Faria NA, Miragaia M, Lito LM, Melo-Cristino J, Lencastre H. Extensive Dissemination of Methicillin-Resistant *Staphylococcus aureus* (MRSA) between the Hospital and the Community in a Country with a High Prevalence of Nosocomial MRSA. *PLoS One*. 2013; 8, e59960.
15. Pichette A, Larouche PL, Lebrun M, Legault J. Composition and antibacterial activity of *Abies balsamea* essential oil. *Phytother. Res*. 2006; 20, 371-373.
16. Kubo I, Muroi H, Kubo A. Naturally occurring antiacne agents. *J. Nat. Prod*. 1994; 57, 917.
17. Hammer KA, Carson CF, Riley TV. Antifungal activity of the components of *Melaleuca alternifolia* (tea tree) oil. *J. Appl. Microbiol*. 2003; 95, 853-860.
18. Viera TM, Dias HJ, Medeiros TCT, Grundmann CO, Groppo M, Heleno VCG, Martins CHG, Cunha WR, Crotti AEM, Silva EO. Chemical composition and antimicrobial activity of the essential oil of *Artemisia absinthium* (Asteraceae) leaves. *J Essent Oil Bear*. 2017; 20: 123-131.
19. Rossiter SE, Fletcher MH, Wuest WM. Natural Products as Platforms To Overcome Antibiotic Resistance. *Chemical Reviews*. 2017; 117, 12415-12474.
20. Joshi RK. Role of Natural Products against Microorganisms. *Am J Clin Microbiol Antimicrob*. 2018; 1, 1005.
21. Fyhrquist P, Virjamo V, Hiltunen E, Julkunen-Tiitto R. Epidihydropinidine, the main piperidine

alkaloid compound of Norway spruce (*Piceaabies*) shows promising antibacterial and anti-Candida activity. *Fitoterapia*. 2017;117:138-146.

22. Conlon-Bingham GM, Aldeyab M, Scott M, Kearney MP, Farren D, Gilmore F, McElney J. Effects of Antibiotic Cycling Policy on Incidence of Healthcare-Associated MRSA and *Clostridioidesdifficile* Infection in Secondary Healthcare Settings. *Emerg Infect Dis*. 2019;25:52-62.

23. Gupta S, Bhagat M, Sudan R, Bindu K. Bioautography Guided Isolation and Characterization of Antimicrobial Compounds of *Piceasmithiana*. *JSM Biol*. 2017; 2: 1012.

Table 1. Chemical composition of <i>Picea smithiana</i> essential oil with their respective amount			
S. no.	Name of the compound	Nature of the compound	Amount (%)
1	Santene	Monoterpene	1.91
2	Alpha pinene	Monoterpene	38.82
3	Camphene	Monoterpene	7.75
4	Beta pinene	Monoterpene	7.41
5	Alpha-phellandrene	Monoterpene	3.15
6	Alpha terpinene	Monoterpene	0.5
7	Para cymene	Monoterpene	0.68
8	Limonene	Monoterpene	3.8
9	Beta phellandrene	Monoterpene	6.35
10	Terpinolene	Monoterpene	0.83
11	5-isopropyl-2-methylbicyclo[3.1.0] hexane- 2, 3- diol	Monoterpene	3.17
12	Alpha terpineol	oxygenated monoterpene	0.48
13	p-menth-2-en-1-ol	oxygenated monoterpene	2.75
14	Trans-piperitol	oxygenated monoterpene	1.4
15	Geranylformate	oxygenated monoterpene	0.72
16	Piperitone	monoterpene	0.37
17	L-bornyl acetate	Sesquiterpene	3.86
18	Beta caryophyllene	Sesquiterpene	1.67
19	Alpha caryophyllene	Sesquiterpene	1.16
20	c-murolene	Sesquiterpene	0.58
21	Germacrene D	Sesquiterpene	1.19
22	Delta elemene	Sesquiterpene	0.66
23	Beta bisabolene	Sesquiterpene	0.53
24	Delta cadinene	Sesquiterpene	0.85
25	Alpha gurjunene	Sesquiterpene	0.08
26	Alpha selinene	Sesquiterpene	3.3
27	Alpha bisabolol	Sesquiterpene	5.6
Monoterpenes = 74.37; Oxygenated monoterpenes = 5.72; Sesquiterpenes = 19.48			

Characterization of *Picea smithiana* (Wall.) Boiss essential oil and its antibacterial effect against clinically isolated *Staphylococcus aureus* from pus sample

Table 2. Antibacterial activity of the essential oil of *Picea smithiana* against reference strain

Bacterial Strain	<i>C. coli</i>	<i>P. alcalygens</i>	<i>Paeroginosa</i>	<i>A.denitrificans</i>	<i>B. cereus</i>	<i>E. fecalis</i>	<i>S. aureus</i>	<i>B. subtilis</i>
Positive Control	10±0.5	13±0.6	19±0.8	17±0.7	16±0.4	9±0.4	12±0.4	20±0.9
Chloramp henicol (10 g/ml)								
Essential oil	8.5±0.3	11.5±0.6	9±0.3	10±0.4	8±0.3	7±0.4	11±0.2	14±0.6

Data presented as mean±standard deviation; E.oil= essential oil

Table 3: Antibacterial activity of *Picea smithiana* essential oil and different antibiotics against clinical isolates *Staphylococcus aureus* from Pus samples

Clinical pathogen (<i>Staphylococcus aureus</i>) isolated from pus samples	Penicillin (30 µg /ml)	Clindamycin (30 µg /ml)	Azithromycin (20 µg /ml)	Ofloxacin (10 µg/ml)	Essential oil	MIC Essential oil (µg /ml)
Sample No	Zone of inhibition					
1	15	12	2	12	18	0.125
2	12	3	11	13	22	0.125
3	2	12	5	11	25	0.125
4	6	4	6	11	24	0.125
5	12	4	7	13	26	0.125
6	11	6	11	2	22	0.125
7	8	3	11	13	16	0.125
8	8	7	7	12	14	0.125
9	9	9	6	6	21	0.125
10	12	10	9	8	11	0.125

Bioprospecting Thermophilic Bacteria from Geothermal Springs of Jammu Division for Industrial Enzymes

Sneahpreet Kour*, Brajeshwar Singh**, Diksha Raina*** and Akanksha Rathore****

ABSTRACT

Cellular components of thermophiles are extremely thermostable and these together with their unique metabolic capabilities, offer considerable promise for biotechnological applications. Such environments are of great interest to microbiologists and biotechnologists, as the organisms isolated from these environments are a good source of thermostable enzymes. In the present investigation, cultivable diversity of aerobic thermophilic bacteria was isolated from hot springs of Jammu Division of Jammu and Kashmir viz. Rajouri, Tatta Pani hot springs (106.1°F) and Kishtwar, Padhyarna hot springs (131.4°F). Fifty-three thermophilic bacteria were isolated from Tatta Pani hot springs (Rajouri) and 40 from Padhyarna hot springs (Kishtwar). Pure bacterial cultures were screened for their industrial enzyme production potential (Amylases and Lipases) and characterized based on morphological, salt tolerance, temperature tolerance and substrate utilization. Most of the bacteria were Gram-positive rods with endospore. Most of the bacteria had resemblance with genus *Bacillus*. Both sites had great thermophilic biodiversity with huge potential for industrial enzymes.

Keywords: Thermophiles, Hot spring, Thermostable, Tatta Pani, Lipase and Amylase

Introduction

Microbial life does not seem to be limited to specific environments. During the past few decades, it has become clear that microbial communities can be found in the most diverse conditions, including extremes of temperature, pressure, salinity and pH (Kumar et al. 2010). Temperature is one of the most important factor controlling the activity and evolution of micro-organisms. Micro-organisms that have been found to be growing at a temperature range of 55 to 121 °C are known as thermophiles. It is well established that cellular components of thermophiles are highly thermostable. Their unique metabolic capabilities, offer considerable potential for biotechnological applications. Such environments are, therefore, of great interest to microbiologists and biotechnologists, as the organisms isolated from these environments are a good source of thermostable enzymes.

Thermophiles grow at high temperatures; therefore, they must contain metabolites that can function at higher temperatures. Enzymes from extremophiles are of great use in modern biological sciences (for example heat stable DNA polymerases for polymerase chain reaction), medicine and in surfactants due to their ability to work under such conditions that otherwise denatures enzymes taken from most "normal" organisms (Mattila *et al.* 1991). The importance of thermostable biomolecules in the growing field of biotechnology has spurred research into organisms capable of growth at high temperatures. During the past few years, most research on the microbes of hot springs has concentrated on the cultivation and isolation of extreme thermophiles (Belkova *et al.* 2007). Thermophiles from bacterial domain have received special attention for their capacity for bioconversion of substrates of plant origin to several end products such as ethanol and lactate (Wiegel

* Student, Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu, India

** Assistant Professor, Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu, India (corresponding author)

*** Student, Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu, India

**** Student, Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu, India

and Ljungdah, 1981).

In the rural and urban settlements of Jammu and Kashmir the main sources of drinking water are springs, surface, ground and rainwaters. Jammu and Kashmir has various hot water springs. Tatapani is one such hot springs located in the Kalakote region of Rajouri district. As all Jammu and Kashmir thermal springs are of meteoric, rather than volcanic origin, it follows that geology plays a vital role in the physical and chemical characteristics of the water. The spring is situated in a village named after the spring Tatapani expanded in an area of about 3sq.kms. Hot spring water is being used for healing various bodily ailments. The temperature of the water in this spring is about 42-45°C on an average.

Paddar, district in Kishtwar is one of the emerging tourist sightseeing spots in full J&K. The hot springs of Tatapani also adds to the beauty of Paddar. The entire Tatapani village abounds in hot springs ranging from extremely hot to mild water. The main spring is rectangular, situated in front of Shesnag Temple. The temperature of the water in this spring is around 54°C. Hot groundwater comes out from the earth's surface regularly for most part of the year, and is significantly above the ambient ground temperature.

Industrially important enzymes xylanases, amylases, cellulases, and lipases have attracted attention globally because of their wide application in many areas. Amylases have potential application in a wide number of industrial processes such as food, fermentation, textile, paper, detergent, and pharmaceutical industries. Fungal and bacterial amylases have potential use in the pharmaceutical and fine-chemical industries (Ghorai *et al.* 2009). The application of enzyme increases more with the discovery of thermostable enzymes because thermophilic process is more stable, faster, needs lower costs (Rasooli *et al.* 2008). Due to the fact that lipase is quite stable and active in organic solvents, this enzyme has received great interests for use in various industries like petrochemical, waste management and food (Dominguez *et al.* 2005). Other applications include the pharmaceutical, dairy, detergent, cosmetic, oleo chemical, fat-processing, leather, textile and paper industries (Sharma and Gupta, 2001).

Present study is envisaged with the aim of isolating aerobic culturable diversity of thermophilic bacteria from least explored harsh environmental niches and to explore their potential for industrially important thermostable enzyme viz. amylase and lipase production showing higher stability to extremes of temperature and salinity etc.

MATERIALS AND METHODS

SURVEY AND COLLECTION OF WATER SAMPLES

Survey and collection of hot water samples was done at two hot springs viz. Tatapani located in Kalakote region of Rajouri district at an elevation of 2585 meters, with GPS coordinates 33 14'36.37"N and 74 24'55.14"E and Tatapani located in district Kishtwar located at an elevation of 5320 meters with GPS coordinates 33 20'46.25" N and 75 53'12.48" E. Sampling of water samples was done from the hot water sources, by dipping sterile vial. The collected water samples were brought to the laboratory in sterile sealed vials, and then stored at 4°C in refrigerator for further processing for the isolation of thermophilic bacterial colonies.

Isolation of bacterial population

Both dilution plate method and enrichment method was performed for the isolation of thermophilic bacteria to ensure maximum population recovery (Holt and Krieg, 1994). For the enrichment method, 10 ml of sample was transferred into 100 ml of broth (Yeast glucose broth). Incubation was performed in rotary shaker at 60 °C until turbidity was observed. 500 µl of the broth was plated on to the solid media (Yeast glucose agar). For the dilution plate method 10 ml of water samples was transferred in 90 ml of 0.85% saline water. The mud sample was pasteurized for 10 minutes at 80 °C in a waterbath to kill most of the vegetative cells and to eliminate non-spore forming bacteria (Mora *et al.* 1998). Following the heat treatment 1ml aliquots from each sample was transferred in 9 ml of 0.85 % saline water and 6 fold dilutions were prepared. One ml of the dilutions was plated on appropriate solid media (Yeast tryptone agar) and incubated for 24hrs at 60°C. Single colonies thus obtained were picked and purified using streak plate method (Rath and Subramanyam, 1998)

Bacterial colonies obtained were further streaked on freshly prepared nutrient agar plates, followed by incubation at 60°C for 24 hours. A total of 53 bacterial cultures were obtained from Rajouri water samples and 40 from that of Kishtwar water samples. The bacterial strains isolated on NA slants were kept at 4°C in refrigerator for further studies.

Screening of thermophilic bacteria for industrial enzymes

All the bacterial isolates were screened for amylolytic activity by starch hydrolysis test on starch agar plate (Aneja, 2003). The isolates produced clear zones of hydrolysis were considered as amylase producers and were further investigated. Out of 53 cultures from Tatapani, (Rajouri), 22 bacterial cultures showed positive result for amylases. Similarly, out of 40 bacterial cultures from Tatapani, (Kishtwar), 31 bacterial cultures showed zones of clearance which indicated their positive result. Out of 22 positive from Rajouri cultures and 31 bacterial cultures positive results from Kishtwar samples, total 10 cultures, 5 bacterial cultures from each showing high zones of clearance were used for further studies.

Rhodamine B plate assay was used for screening of lipolytic activity of isolated strains according to method of Kouker and Jaeger (1987), with some modifications. Out of 53 cultures from Tatapani, (Rajouri), 14 bacterial cultures showed orange florescent zones which indicated the positive result for lipases. Similarly out of 40 cultures from Tatapani, (Kishtwar), 14 cultures showed orange florescent zones which indicated positive result. Furthermore, orange florescent zones were measured with the help of geometric scale and those cultures showing high zones of clearance were used for further studies. Out of 14 positive cultures from Rajouri sample and 14 positive cultures from Kishtwar sample, total 10 cultures, 5 cultures from each showed high zones of florescence were used for further studies.

Morphological and biochemical characterization

Most of the isolates were Gram-positive with few exceptions. Most of them formed endospore, short, thin and long rods. KB009 (HiMedia®), a comprehensive test system was used to have a biochemical profile of potential thermophilic cultures.

In order to observe salt and temperature tolerance by pure isolates obtained from two hot springs Tatapani (Rajouri) and Tatapani (Kishtwar), the amount of growth was measured in terms of turbidity present in each culture following incubation. Bausch and Lomb Spectronic-20 spectrophotometer was used for measuring turbidity of incubated cultures.

During the experiment, thermophiles were grown in nutrient broth, and incubated at different concentrations of salt (0.50, 1.00, 3.00 and 6.00%) and incubated at 45°C for 48 hours before taking readings on spectrophotometer at 600nm. Similarly, pure isolates from two hot springs were inoculated in Nutrient broth, and then incubated at different temperatures (37, 45, 65 and 70°C) for 48 hours before taking readings on spectrophotometer at 600nm wave length.

RESULTS

Water, soil (sediment) and biomat was collected from two hot springs viz. Tatapani located at an elevation of 2585masl, with 33 14'36.37"N and 74 24'55.14"E coordinates of Kalakote region of district Rajouri and Tatapani located in Padhyarna at an elevation of 5320 masl and 33 20'46.25" N and 75 53'12.48" E coordinates of district Kishtwar . Fifty three bacterial cultures were isolated from Tatapani (Kalakote and Rajouri) water samples and a total of forty bacterial cultures were isolated from Tatapani (Padhyarna and Kishtwar) water samples. Most of the bacteria isolated from water samples were from genus *Bacillus*.

Out of 53 cultures from Tatapani (Rajouri), 22 cultures had significant zones of clearance, indicating positive for amylases. Similarly, out of 40 cultures from Tatapani (Kishtwar), 31 cultures were positive for amylases. Furthermore, cultures, which recorded highest clearance zones, were selected for further studies. Out of twenty two positive cultures from Rajouri isolates, five cultures viz. MBRS-01, MBRS-02, MBRS-03, MBRS-10 and MBRS-11 recorded highest clearance zones i.e. 8.6, 9.6, 8.3, 8.6 and 8.3 mm respectively, indicating good amyolytic potential. Similarly, out of 31 positive cultures Kishtwar, from five best isolates viz. MRKS-21, MBKS-28, MBKS-29, MBKS-39 and MBKS-40 showed high zones of clearance, that 8.3, 7.3, 7.7, 7.6 and 7.3, which indicated good amyolytic potential in these isolates.

Out of 53 cultures from Tattapani (Rajouri), 14 cultures showed significant orange florescent zones of clearance, indicating positive result for lipases. Similarly, out of 40 isolates obtained from Tattapani, Kishtwar, 14 cultures indicated positive result. Isolates indicating best potential were taken up for further studies. Out of 14 positive from Rajouri cultures, 5 cultures viz. MBRS-14, MBRS-15, MBRS-19, MBRS-20 and MBRS-21 showed best zones of clearance, that is 10.6, 10.6, 11.3, 11.6 and 10.3 mm respectively, indicating good lipolytic potential. Similarly out of 14 cultures positive from Kishtwar samples, 5 cultures viz. MBKS15, MBKS16, MBKS17, MBKS20 and MBKS21 showed best zones of clearance, that is 13.6, 15.6, 12.3, 10.3 and 12.0 mm respectively, indicating good lipolytic potential.

Morphological characteristics of single cell colony were used for preliminary identification of a bacterial genus. Shape of the colonies varied from irregular to round. Texture, colour/ pigmentation of colonies were also considered during identification (Table 1 and 2). The identification of potential bacterial isolates was based on many factors, including cell and colony morphology, chemical composition of cell walls and biochemical activities. Biochemical reactions of various bacterial isolates were analysed using ABIS® Online Software (Table 3 and 4).

Using HiMedia® readymade biochemical kits, potential cultures were identified. It was observed that, most of the bacterial isolates were of genus *Bacillus* (Table. 3 and 4).

Thermophiles isolated from Rajouri and Kishtwar water samples were screened for temperature and salt tolerance. It was observed that most of the cultures had tolerance towards thermophilic ranges of temperatures MBKS-19 (0.791) & MBRS-40 (0.982) OD at 600nm at 70°C. Thermophilic population was also screened for salt tolerance at different ranges. It was observed that cultures had great tolerance to different salt concentrations with highest that of MBKS-3 (0.870) & MBRS-41 (1.477) OD at 600nm at 6.00% salt concentration, greatly desirable for industrial usage.

Discussion

Cultivable diversity of aerobic thermophilic bacteria was studied from hot springs of Jammu Division of Jammu and Kashmir and studied for thermophilic characteristics. These bacterial isolates sustaining at thermophilic range were isolated, characterized and screened for their industrial enzyme production potential (Amylases and Lipases). Potential enzyme producing strains were selected and further studied for temperature and salt tolerance, highly desired for industrial usage.

Most of the bacteria isolated from hot water samples collected from both hot springs were that of genus *Bacillus*, described as largest and heterogeneous collection of aerobic and facultative anaerobic, rod-shaped, Gram-positive to Gram variable, endospore-forming bacteria (Goto, *et al.* 2000). They often form microbial mats with other bacteria, from Antarctic ice to continental hot springs. Thermophilic bacilli show optimal growth at temperatures ranging from 45-70°C (Maugeri *et al.* 2001) and can be isolated from both thermophilic and mesophilic environments (Martinson, *et al.* 1996) just like we did from water samples collected from two hot springs.

Several industrially important enzymes have attracted attention globally because of their wide application in many areas. Enzymes such as amylases, cellulases and lipases have potential application in a wide number of industrial processes such as food, fermentation, textile, paper, detergent, and pharmaceutical industries. Fungal and bacterial amylases have potential use in the pharmaceutical and fine-chemical industries. In our study, we too screened various bacterial isolates for the potential of producing industrial enzymes viz. Amylases and Lipases. Lipases are quite stable and active in organic solvents. This enzyme has received great interests for use in various industries like petrochemical, waste management and food (Dominguez, *et al.* 2005). Lipases also have application in pharmaceutical, dairy, detergent, cosmetic, oleo chemical, fat-processing, leather, textile and paper industries (Sharma and Gupta, 2001). Most of the cultures isolated from our hot water samples have indicated good potential of producing lipases. MBKS-16 with 15.6 mm zone of clearance was best among forty thermophiles isolated from Kishtwar hot springs followed by MBRS-20 (11.6 mm) from Rajouri hot springs. These cultures have great potential for the production of lipases and could be exploited for industrial applications.

Another important enzyme of microbial origin is amylase. Amylases have potential application in several industrial processes such as food, fermentation, textile, paper, detergent, and pharmaceutical industries. Amylases of microbial origin could be potentially useful in the pharmaceutical and fine

chemical industries (Ghorai, *et al.* 2007). In this study, we also screened fifty-three cultures isolated from Rajouri and forty from hot springs of Kishtwar. Most of the cultures gave indications of good enzymatic potential. Culture MBRS-2 with 9.6mm and MBKS-21 having 8.3mm zone of clearance isolated from Rajouri and Kishtwar hot springs respectively, were best performers as potential amylase producers. Large range of extra cellular thermostable enzymes are being produced by thermophilic strains of genus *Bacillus*, of which amylases, cellulases, proteases, and lipases are of significant industrial importance. As reported by Amnin *et al.* 2008, most of the cultures isolated from our hot water samples were of genus *Bacillus*.

Twenty best performing cultures from two locations, five each for two enzymes were characterized based on morphology and biochemical behaviour. Similar to studies reported by Pathak and Rekadwad, (2013), most of the cultures characterized during our studies belonged to the genus *Bacillus*.

Industries have harsh environments like high temperature for process operations and fluctuating salinity conditions. Goyal *et al.* (2005) described that stability of enzymes at higher temperature is highly desirous for industrial applications. Keeping in mind such requirements we too studied temperature tolerance by all (53 from Rajouri and 40 from Kishtwar) bacterial cultures isolated from two hot springs also reported that *Bacillus* sp. amylase isolated from Unkeshwar hot spring showed optimum activity at 60 °C.

Skoog *et al.* (1996) studied effects of different salt concentrations on microbial growth. Salinity tolerance is also an important characteristic for industrial usage. We also studied salt tolerance by various bacterial isolates at four different concentrations (0.5, 1.0, 3.0 and 6.00%). During our studies, it was observed that MBRS-41 could tolerate 6% of salt, with 1.477 OD at 600nm; leading among fifty-three odd cultures isolated from Rajouri hot springs. MBKS-3 with 0.87 OD at 600nm wavelength, topped in salt tolerance among forty isolates from Kishtwar hot springs.

Finally, in our study we concluded that all the three regions Jammu, Kashmir and Ladhakh have several sources of hot water with varying temperatures. Tatapani is one of such hot spring located at the Kalakote region of Rajouri district and another Tatapani located at Kishtwar district of Jammu division. The waters of these thermal springs with pH ranging from 8.2-9.2, considered to being of great importance for healing various bodily ailments, but with poor drinking ability, could be exploited for isolating industrially important microbes. We successfully isolated and characterized bacterial population from these two hot springs having potential to produce industrial enzymes viz. Amylases and Lipases.

References

1. Amnin, A.L., Waraganegara, F.M. and Akhmaloka. 2008. Culture independent and culture dependent approaches on microbial community analysis at gedongsongo hot spring, International Journal of Integrative Biology. 2(3):245-252.
2. Aneja, K.R. 2003. Experiments in Microbiology Plant Pathology and Biotechnology, Fourth Edition, New Age International (P) Ltd., Publishers, New Delhi, pp 320.

3. Belkova N.L., Tazaki K., Zakharova J.R., Parfenova V.V. 2007. Activity of bacteria in water of hot springs from Southern and Central Kamchatskaya geothermal provinces, Kamchatka Peninsula. *Russian Journal of Microbiology and Research*. 162(2): 99-107.
4. Dominguez, A., Pastrana, L., Longo, M.A., Rua, M.L. and Sanroman, M.A. 2005. Lipolytic enzyme production by *Thermus thermophilus* HB27 in a stirred tank bioreactor. *Biochemical Engineering Journal*. 26: 95-99.
5. Ghorai, S., Banik, S.P., Verma, D., Chowdhury, S., Mukherjee, S. and Khowala, S. 2009, Fungal biotechnology in food and feed processing. *International Food Research Journal*. 42: 577587.
6. Goyal, N., Gupta, J.K. and Soni, S.K. 2005. "A novel raw starch digesting thermostable α -amylase from *Bacillus* sp. I-3 and its use in the direct hydrolysis of raw potato starch," *Enzyme and Microbial Technology*. vol. 37, pp. 723-734.
7. Goto, K., Omura, T., Hara, Y. and Sadale, Y. 2000. Application of partial 16S rDNA sequence as an index for rapid identification of species in the genus *Bacillus*. *Journal of General Applied Microbiology* 46, 18.
8. Holt, J.G. and Krieg, N.R. .Enrichment and Isolation . in *Methods for General and Molecular Bacteriology*. (ed.) 1994. pp. 197-200. P. Gerhardt (ASM Publications).
9. Kouker, G. and Jaeger, K.E. 1987. Specific and sensitive plate assay for bacterial lipases, *Applications in Environmental Microbiology*. 53:2113.
10. Kumar, A., Bisht, B.S., Joshi, V.D., Singh, A.K., Talwar, A. 2010. Physical, chemical and bacteriological study of water from rivers of Uttarakhand. *Journal of Human Ecology*. 32(3): 169-173.
11. Marteinsson, V.T., Birrien, J.L., Jeanthon, C. and Prieur, D. 1996. Numerical taxonomic study of thermophilic *Bacillus* isolated from three geographically separated deep-sea hydrothermal vents. *FEMS Microbiology Ecology* 21, 255266.
12. Mattila, P., Korpela, T., Tenkanen, K. and Pitkanen, K. 1991. Fidelity of DNA synthesis by the *Thermococcus litoralis* DNA polymerase, an extremely heat stable enzyme with proofreading activity. *Nucleic Acids Res.*, 19(18): 4967-4973.
13. Maugeri, T.L., Gugliandolo, C., Caccamo, D. and Stackebrandt, E. 2001. A polyphasic taxonomic study of thermophilic bacilli from shallow, marine vents. *Systematic and Applied Microbiology* 24, 572587.
14. Mora, D., Fortina, M.G. and Nicastro, G. 1998. Genotypic characterization of thermophilic bacilli: a study on new isolates and several reference strains. *Resources in Microbiology*. 149:711-722.
15. Pathak, A.P. and Rekadwad, B.N. 2013. Isolation of thermophilic *Bacillus* sp. strain EF_TYK1-5 and production of industrially important thermostable α -amylase using suspended solids for fermentation. *Journal of Science and Industrial Research*. 72. 685-689.

16. Rasooli, I., Astaneh, S.D.A., Borna, H. and Barchini, K.A. 2008. A thermostable α -amylase producing natural variant of *Bacillus* spp. isolated from soil in Iran. *American Journal of Agricultural and Biological Sciences*, 3(3): 591-596.

17. Rath, C.C. and Subramanyam, V.R. 1998. Isolation of thermophilic bacteria from hot springs of Orissa, *Iranian Journal of Microbiology*. 25 (2-3):113-119.

18. Sharma, S. and Gupta, M.N. 2001. Alginate as a macroaffinity ligand and an additive for enhanced activity and thermostability of lipases. *Biotechnology and Applied Biochemistry*. 33:161165.

19. Skoog, D.A., West, D. and Holler, F.J.1996. *Fundamentals of Analytical Chemistry*. 7th ed, Saunders College Publishing: New York.35:265-275.

Wiegel, J. and Ljungdahl, L.G. 1981. *Thermoanaerobacter ethanolicus* gen. nov., sp.nov., a new extreme thermophilic, anaerobic bacterium. *Archives Microbiology* .128:343-348.

List of Tables

Table 1 Morphological characteristics of Rajouri isolates

S.No	Culture	Colony Characteristics	Microscopic Characteristics
1.	MBRS1	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve rods, no endospore formation
2.	MBRS2	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve short rods, endospore formation
3.	MBRS3	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation.
4.	MBRS4	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation.
5.	MBRS5	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve long rods, no endospore formation
6.	MBRS6	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation.
7.	MBRS7	Creamish white and sticky	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation.
8.	MBRS8	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
9.	MBRS9	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods typically arranged in chains,, endospore formation.
10.	MBRS10	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods typically arranged in chains, endospore formation.
11.	MBRS11	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
12.	MBRS12	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.
13.	MBRS13	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.
14.	MBRS14	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
15.	MBRS15	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.
16.	MBRS16	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
17.	MBRS17	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.
18.	MBRS18	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.
19.	MBRS19	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
20.	MBRS20	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.

21.	MBRS21	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
22.	MBRS22	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
23.	MBRS23	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods typically arranged in patterns, endospore formation.
24.	MBRS24	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation.
25.	MBRS25	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, no endospore formation.
26.	MBRS26	Creamish white and sticky	Gram negative short rods, endospore formation
27.	MBRS27	Creamish white and sticky	Gram negative short rods, endospore formation
28.	MBRS28	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
29.	MBRS29	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
30.	MBRS30	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
31.	MBRS31	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
32.	MBRS32	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
33.	MBRS33	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation
34.	MBRS34	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
35.	MBRS35	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation
36.	MBRS36	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
37.	MBRS37	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
38.	MBRS39	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation
39.	MBRS30	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation
40.	MBRS40	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
41.	MBRS41	Creamish white and sticky	Gram negative rods, endospore formation
42.	MBRS42	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods
43.	MBRS43	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods typically arranged in long chains, endospore formation
44.	MBRS44	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation
45.	MBRS45	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
46.	MBRS46	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation
47.	MBRS47	Creamish white and sticky	Gram negative rods typically arranged in chains, endospore formation
48.	MBRS48	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive short rods, endospore formation.
49.	MBRS49	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
50.	MBRS50	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation
51.	MBRS51	Creamish white and sticky	Gram negative rods, endospore formation
52.	MBRS52	Creamish white and sticky	Thin rods, no endospore formation, gram positive, clostridium type characters
53.	MBRS53	Creamish white and sticky	Gram positive rods, endospore formation

Table 2 Morphological characteristics of Kishtwar isolates

S.no	Culture	Colony characteristics	Microscopic characteristics
1.	MBKS1	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve thin rods arranged in chains, no endospore formation
2.	MBKS2	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
3.	MBKS3	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods arranged in patterns, no endospore formation
4.	MBKS4	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
5.	MBKS5	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
6.	MBKS6	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve short rods, no endospore formation
7.	MBKS7	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
8.	MBKS8	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve short rods, no endospore formation
9.	MBKS9	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, no endospore formation
10.	MBKS10	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve long rods, no endospore formation
11.	MBKS11	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve short rods, no endospore formation
12.	MBKS12	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve short rods, no endospore formation
13.	MBKS13	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
14.	MBKS14	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
15.	MBKS15	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
16.	MBKS16	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
17.	MBKS17	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, no endospore formation
18.	MBKS18	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
19.	MBKS19	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
20.	MBKS20	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
21.	MBKS21	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve thin rods arranged in chains, no endospore formation
22.	MBKS22	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
23.	MBKS23	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
24.	MBKS24	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
25.	MBKS25	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, no endospore formation
26.	MBKS26	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation

27.	MBKS27	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, no endospore formation
28.	MBKS28	White and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, no endospore formation
29.	MBKS29	White and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
30.	MBKS30	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
31.	MBKS31	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
32.	MBKS32	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
33.	MBKS33	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
34.	MBKS34	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
35.	MBKS35	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
36.	MBKS36	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve short rods, no endospore formation
37.	MBKS37	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve short rods arranged in chains, no endospore formation
38.	MBKS38	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation
39.	MBKS39	Creamish white and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods arranged in chains, endospore formation
40.	MBKS40	White and sticky colonies	Gram +ve rods, endospore formation

Table 3 Identification of amylase producers from Kishtwar and Rajouri on the basis of biochemical kit using ABIS[®] online software

S.No	Culture	Identification on the basis of ABIS [®] online software
1.	MBKS-21	<i>Bacillus megaterium</i> ~ 78% (acc: 37%)
2.	MBKS-28	<i>Bacillus smithii</i> ~ 89% (acc: 24%)
3.	MBKS-29	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 65%)
4.	MBKS-39	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 77% (acc: 38%)
5.	MBKS-40	<i>Bacillus korlensis</i> ~ 83% (acc: 35%)
6.	MBRS-1	<i>Bacillus smithii</i> ~ 89% (acc: 24%)
7.	MBRS-2	<i>Bacillus korlensis</i> ~ 84% (acc: 56%)
8.	MBRS-3	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 65%)
9.	MBRS-10	<i>Geobacillus (Bacillus) stearothermophilus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 70%)
10.	MBRS-11	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 45%)

Table 4 Identification of lipase producers from Kishtwar and Rajouri on the basis of biochemical kit using ABIS® online software

S.No	Culture	Identification on the basis of ABIS® online software
1.	MBKS-15	<i>Paenibacillus thiaminolyticus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 37%)
2.	MBKS-16	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 90% (acc: 50%)
3.	MBKS-17	<i>Geobacillus (Bacillus) stearothermophilus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 68%)
4.	MBKS-20	<i>Paenibacillus thiaminolyticus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 37%)
5.	MBKS-21	<i>Bacillus korlensis</i> ~ 77% (acc: 45%)
6.	MBRS-14	<i>Geobacillus (Bacillus) stearothermophilus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 68%)
7.	MBRS-15	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 90% (acc: 50%)
8.	MBRS-19	<i>Bacillus cereus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 65%)
9.	MBRS-20	<i>Paenibacillus thiaminolyticus</i> ~ 83% (acc: 37%)
10.	MBRS-21	<i>Bacillus licheniformis</i> ~ 78% (acc: 37%)

SOCIAL SCIENCES

B

Disaster Management in India: Analysis of Institutional Framework and Policy Perspective

Kamal Singh Chauhan*

ABSTRACT

Disaster management approach had been reactive and relief oriented across the world, including in the developed countries, in the past. However, several international initiatives gave impetus to integrated disaster management with an aim to reduce socio-economic losses as also the environmental degradation due to disasters, globally. These initiatives, as also series of major disasters in the last decade of 20th century, led to the enactment of Indian Disaster Management Act 2005, which brought in a paradigm shift in disaster management in India. Sendai Framework adopted in 2015, shifted the focus from disaster management to disaster risk management. Consequently, in India, a robust institutional, legal, and financial framework for holistic disaster management has been put in place. However, substantial improvement in terms of physical, social, psychological, and economic damage due to disasters is yet to be realised in India. This raises questions about the efficacy and effectiveness of existing disaster management framework, in terms of its outcome. In this paper, therefore, an attempt has been made to trace the evolution and analyse existing institutional disaster management in India, with a view to find shortcomings if any, and give recommendations to overcome the same.

Keywords: Disaster Risk Reduction, Disaster Risk Management, Disaster Risk Governance, Disaster Management Act, National Policy, National Disaster Management Plan, Sendai Framework

Introduction

In common parlance, disaster is any catastrophic event, calamity or grave occurrence, which causes substantial physical, psychological, social, economic, and environmental damage of such a magnitude that surpasses the coping capacity of the affected community (Govt. of India, 2005, p.4). Conceptually, like any other management process, disaster management (DM) also entail spectrum of activities such as planning, organising, coordinating and executing measures, pre and post-disaster. Pre-disaster measures aim at prevention, mitigation and preparedness, whereas, postdisaster measures include response, rehabilitation, and recovery and reconstruction (Sinha, 2015, pp. 419-420). As per Disaster Management Act (DM Act) 2005, disaster management is a holistic and continuous process of planning, organising, coordinating and implementing measures which are essential for prevention, mitigation, capacity building, preparedness, prompt response, and assessment of the damage (Govt. of India, 2005, p.4). Measures related to evacuation, rescue and relief, and rehabilitation has been further added in the National Policy on Disaster Management 2009,

* Research Scholar, Department of Strategic and Regional Studies, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

to amplify the scope of disaster management in India (Govt of India, 2009, p. 7). With the adoption of Sendai Framework for Disaster Risk Reduction (SFDRR) 2015-2030, the focus has shifted from disaster management to disaster risk management, which entails risk assessment, risk prevention and reduction, risk governance, and preparedness for effective response and to build back better (Govt of India, 2016, p. xiii).

India is prone to almost all the natural hazards due to its vast and diverse geographic expanse, and varying climatic conditions. About 60 percent of the Indian land area is susceptible to varying severity of earthquakes. Out of 7500 kilometres of the coastline, about 5700 kilometres is vulnerable to cyclones and tsunamis. More than half of the cultivable land is known to have suffered droughts in the past. Flooding of over 10 percent of the land has been a regular phenomenon. Most of the hilly and mountainous terrain is susceptible to landslides/ mudslides, and high-altitude areas are prone to snow-slide/ avalanches. (Govt of India, 2009, pp. 1-5). Besides natural hazards, chemical, biological, radiological and nuclear (CBRN) hazards, may also cause severe disasters/emergencies accidentally or due to terrorist actions/ war. It is an open secret that some terrorist organisations are on the lookout to acquire CBRN weapon capability. Hence, likely hood of CBRN emergencies in India are real and have to be factored in our disaster management initiatives (Raj A., 2008, p. 170).

According to the Centre for Researches for Epidemiology of Disasters (CRED), Asia is the most disaster-prone, and affected region (CRED, 2013, pp. 1-2). India is among the five most frequently disaster-hit countries in the world. Average annual economic damage in India, due to disasters from 2006 to 2015, has been to the tune of \$4.4 billion (CRED, 2016, p. 4). Apart from earlier disasters with devastating impact, such as Bhuj Earthquake, Indian Ocean Tsunami, Bihar Kosi Flood, 2002, Mumbai Flood; recent disasters of this millennium, that is Uttarakhand Flood, J&K flood, Chennai flood, El-Nino Drought 2015, Cyclones Phailin and Hudhud, Forest fire 2015, Heatwave 2015 and 2016, and Kerala flood etc., have caused considerable loss of lives, livelihood, and extensive damage to socio-economic infrastructure and ecosystems. This highlights the importance of the understanding of hazard, vulnerability, and risk factors in the dynamics of disaster management (Gupta et al., 2016, p. 3).

Distribution of the occurrences of reported disasters, and average annual economic loss in India, from 1972 to 2014, reveal that floods account for 52 per cent of occurrences, which have caused 63 percent of total economic losses; followed by cyclones with 31 per cent occurrences, which have inflicted 19 per cent of the total damage, in the time span of 35 years. However, landslides, earthquakes, and droughts put together account for 17 per cent of all the disasters, which caused 18 per cent of the total economic damage during this period (World Bank, 2016, p. 2). Notwithstanding above distribution, the severity of earthquakes and droughts in terms of loss of lives and suffering of people is quite pronounced. In India, 333 million people were affected due to drought in 2016 alone, which accounts for 58 percent of the world total of the year (CRED, 2016, p. 4). This distribution also reveals that floods and cyclones hit the country very frequently, and cause maximum damage, which is required to be factored in the disaster risk management accordingly.

So far, several studies have been conducted after each disaster to find out the reasons for the occurrence and manifestation of disasters, and shortcomings in response to each disaster in a piecemeal manner. However, there has been hardly any structured study to holistically analyse the existing institutional disaster management framework in India, especially after the preparation of National Disaster Management Plan (NDMP) 2016, which is apparently a very exhaustive and inclusive document. Bahadur, Lovell and Pichon prepared a project report of a research commissioned by Climate Development Knowledge Network (CDKN), and carried out by Overseas Development Institute (ODI), with the support from the All India Disaster Mitigation Institute (AIIDMI), which analysed state disaster management plans (SDMPs) of five Indian states, differing in terms of climate, geography, size and location, that is Assam, Bihar, Gujarat, Odisha, and Uttarakhand. The research went into details of SDMPs to ascertain the extent to which these plans address all the stages of disaster management cycle: prevention, mitigation, preparedness, and relief and response. Research also dwelled into various aspects such as vulnerability assessment, financial arrangements for disaster risk reduction (DRR), mainstreaming of DRR across different departments, gender and social inclusion, and alignment of SDMPs to Sendai Framework for Disaster Risk Reduction (SFDRR) 2015-2030. The research besides bringing out some significant deficiencies in the SDMPs highlights the political and institutional inertia to shift the focus from relief and response-oriented preparedness to DRR (Bahadur, Lovell, and Pichon, 2016, p. 5). Some of the important findings and recommendations are deliberated subsequently in the study.

Mohanan and Menon, analysed the NDMP 2016 using a widely accepted and comprehensive framework for audit and governance of IT enterprises, known as Control Objectives for IT (COBIT) 5 principles. They have brought out that NDMP falls short of meeting the needs of all the stakeholders, besides being deficient in proper responsibility matrix as per RACI (responsibility, accountability, consulting and informing), chart. They also highlighted that NDMP has mixed up two different aspects of governance and management, which need to be understood and clearly factored to ensure proper evaluation of stakeholders needs, conditions and options; to issue proper directions, and to monitor objectives as a function of governance; besides management discipline of planning, building, running and monitoring activities in accordance with the direction set by the governance body (Mohan, and Menon, 2016, p.3). Tripathi analysed the preparedness trends for flood disasters in India. He brought out the severity and the frequency of floods, and national disaster management structure to deal with it. He stressed the need for better preparedness for effective response. However, he did not examine the existing disaster framework in detail (Tripathi, 2015). Pramod Patil has also analysed the disaster management in India and brought out that there are deficiencies in disaster warning systems, communication, and mitigation aspects. He also brought out that the existing system focuses more on disaster response than on mitigation. The absence of strict laws and poor implementation is found as one of the major shortcomings in his citation (Patil, 2012, p.5). A roundtable conference jointly organised by Vivekananda International Foundation (VIF) and Policy Perspectives Foundation (PPF) to revisit India's disaster response mechanism brought out organisational deficiencies of National Disaster Response Force (NDRF), and lack of involvement

planning and coordination during preparedness stage for want of role clarity in institutional mechanism (VIF & PPF, 2016). Some other studies have also been conducted on the role of Armed Forces in disaster management (DM), which have highlighted shortcomings in coordination between civil administration and Armed Forces, as also lack of specialised training and equipment available with the Armed Forces for better response (Raj, 2008; Dagur, 2008; Krishna, and Damle, 2017; and Kumar, 2012).

The study is descriptive and analytical in nature. It is based on both primary and secondary sources including the legal and policy documents of the Government of India along with the media reports and academic works done by different scholars.

Evolution of Disaster Management in India

People of India have been experiencing a series of natural disasters, as also disasters caused by wars and invasions since pre-recorded history era. Ancient Indian religious scriptures such as Atharava Veda, and Brihat Samhita, besides promoting harmony between human beings and natural environment, also dealt with disaster management to include aspects of prevention, mitigation, capacity development, preparedness etc. Arthshastra written by Chanakya also contains a chapter on disasters and various prevention, mitigation, and relief measures (Samasastry, 1915, pp.294-298) & (Iyer, 1884, pp.149-162). However, the old wisdom died down gradually with the passage of time.

During pre and post-independence till 1990, disaster management remained reactive and relief oriented in India. Indian states responded to disasters under relief codes, through respective relief commissioners of relief departments. Central Relief Commissioner, in Ministry of Agriculture, Govt of India, used to allocate relief funds and coordinated the relief measures at the national level. Flood relief was at the centre stage. However, declaration of the 1990s as International Decade for Natural Disaster Reduction (IDNDR) by UN, triggered a significant shift from activity based reactive and relief-oriented actions to a proactive approach, encompassing mitigation and preparedness, besides relief and resettlement measures for disaster management. Consequently, for the first time, a Natural Disaster Management (NDM) Division was established under the Ministry of Agriculture (Govt of India, 2011, p. 55). In 1993 as part of the Central Sector Scheme, Natural Disaster Management Programme with the major objective of developing the national capability for disaster reduction and mitigation started in India. The major components of this programme were human resource development, research and consultancy services, maintaining details of major disasters, adding strength to DM Division, and establishment of national centre for disaster management at the Centre and disaster management faculties at all the states, besides conducting various activities under IDNDR (Govt of India, 1998).

The Yokohama strategy, which was based on the belief that for sustainable growth, adequate measures for disaster reduction and prevention, and preparedness to reduce losses by developing resilient communities and societies, are essential; had telling effect in disaster management in India. This strategy enunciated the necessity of risk assessment, prevention and preparedness as the basic

principles of disaster risk reduction (Cabinet Office, Japan, 2015, pp. 2-3). Hence, from 1994 to 1997, a number of initiatives were taken in India. Hazards mapping and vulnerability assessment of buildings were carried out, and Atlas of India was prepared, which contains hazards maps for earthquake, flood, and cyclone, in 1: 2.5 million scales, for all the states and UT. The risk of the buildings was also highlighted. In the lights of these risk assessments, the then existing Town and Country Planning Act was found flawed, and suitable amendments were sought. Guidelines were formulated for land use zoning and disaster resistant constructions. Information technologies were strengthened with the main focus to remote sensing, geographical information system (GIS), a global positioning system (GPS) and satellite communication etc., to make the disaster warning systems (DWS) more robust, reliable and relevant. Monitoring and impact assessment of natural hazards using space technology commenced during this decade. Apart from already existing 145 flood monitoring and forecasting stations, 12 more were established during the decade. A reliable cyclone warning through satellites and timely evacuation saved precious human lives during cyclones in Andhra Pradesh in 1990 and in Gujarat in 1999. Besides DWS, some cyclone shelters through emergency reconstruction programmes were also constructed (Govt of India, 1999, pp. 9-17).

After few devastating disasters such as Latur Earthquake in 1993, Malpa Landslides in 1994, Orissa Super Cyclone in 1999, and Bhuj Earthquake in 2001, a high-power committee (HPC) was set up in 2001, with a view to give a holistic look to disaster management in the country. Report of this committee brought in a major shift in the entire outlook of disaster management in India (Govt of India, 2002). Consequently, the DM division was shifted from the Ministry of Agriculture to the Ministry of Home Affairs (MHA) in 2002. In 2005, the Hyogo framework to create disaster resilience across the world was adopted. The aim of the Hyogo Framework was to initiate measures to remarkably reduce the losses of lives, and economy, as also to reduce social, and environmental degradation due to disasters. Three strategic goals related to, integration of DRR into developments, the creation of robust institutional mechanism, enhancing capacities to make communities hazards resilient, disaster preparedness, and response and recovery, were incorporated in this framework (Cabinet Office, Japan, 2015, pp. 4-5).

Against this background, Indian Disaster Management Act was enacted in 2005, which enabled a legal and institutional integrated framework for integrated disaster management in India (Govt of India, 2011, p.5). However, meanwhile, the legal framework was already prepared by Odisha and Gujarat. The DM Act 2005 stipulated the formation of National Disaster Management Authority (NDMA) at the national level, under the chairmanship of the Prime Minister; State Disaster Management Authorities (SDMAs) at the state level, under respective Chief Ministers. Similarly, at each district, District Disaster Management Authorities (DDMAs) were required to be established under respective District Magistrates (DMs)/ Deputy Commissioners (DCs). These disaster management authorities are mandated to ensure holistic disaster management in the country. The Act further mandated the creation of National Executive Committee (NEC) at the national level to assist NDMA, and state executive committees (SECs) at the state level to assist respective SDMAs. The DM

Act also mandated the establishment of National Institute for Disaster Management (NIDM) for capacity building at the national level. NIDM is also required to assist states in establishing the disaster management institutes for capacity development at the state level. As mandated in the Act, National Disaster Response Force (NDRF) at the national level has been created. DM Act also mandated for preparation of DM plans by all the states. The Act also catered for financial provisions for the DM. (Govt of India, 2011, p.57). Consequent to the enactment of DM Act, a National Policy on Disaster Management was issued by the NDMA in 2009. State Disaster Response Force (SDRF) at the state level have also been created, in accordance with the national policy on DM. Also, detailed guidelines on the preparation of DM plans by the states, and on the management of different disasters ranging from natural to CBRN, and industrial disasters, were issued by the NDMA.

However, disaster risk reduction (DRR) remained a major challenge, hence, in the third world conference on DRR, Sendai Framework for DRR (SFDRR) 2015-2030 was formulated with four priorities and seven global targets (Cabinet Office, Japan, 2015, pp. 7-10). India is a signatory to Sendai Framework., which has few major shifts from earlier international strategies and frameworks. One, goals are expressed as an outcome rather than a set of measures; two, respective governments have been mandated to strengthen the risk governance framework; three, emphasis on departure from disaster management to disaster risk management; four, scope increased from natural to all kind of disasters; five, significant importance is given to environmental aspects; and six, disaster risk reduction as a policy, is multisectoral to include health and education also. The Sendai Framework also included seven global targets aimed at substantial reduction of mortality, number of people affected, economic loss, critical infrastructure damage; a substantial increase in the number of countries having and implementing disaster risk reduction strategy by 2020; and availability and exploitation of early warning system for all type of hazards by 2030. Sendai Framework also laid down following four priorities:

- * Understanding risk.
- * Strengthening disaster risk governance.
- * Investing in DRR to enhance resilience.
- * Improving disaster preparedness to be able to respond effectively and 'Build Back Better' (BBB) (Govt of India, 2016, p. 7).

Thus, NEC, as mandated in the Act, prepared National Plan on Disaster Management factoring all the aspects of Sendai Framework in 2016. National Plan was delayed by a decade after the enactment of DM Act. In the meantime many states already prepared their disaster management plans, which should have otherwise, been based on the National Plan.

Existing Legal-Institutional Framework and Its Performance

Enactment of DM Act 2005 set the ball rolling for putting institutional framework firmly in place through national policy, various guidelines, and plans at all levels, for disaster management in India. This further enabled processing and strengthening of the techno-legal regime for disaster risk reduction and disaster risk governance in the country. NDMA was formally constituted vide a Govt.

executive order, in September 2006. NDMA is responsible to issue various policies on disaster management at the national level. NDMA is also mandated to issue guidelines to concerned Central Govt ministries/ departments to ensure DRR and disaster risk mitigation by incorporating suitable measures in the developmental plan. Besides approving the National Disaster Management Plan (NDMP), the NDMA is also required, to issue guidelines for preparation of State Disaster Management Plans (SDMPs), to coordinate implementation of the policies and plans, to recommend funds for DRR, and to ensure disaster mitigation and capacity building. Broad details of role and responsibilities of NIDM for capacity building and assistance in policy formulation at the national level have been laid down in Section 42 & 43 of the DM Act. However, NIDM is required to function as per the policies and guidelines issued by the NDMA. (Govt of India, 2011, pp. 57-58).

As mandated in the DM Act 2005, state disaster management authorities (SDMAs), under respective Chief Ministers, have been established in all the states. Role and responsibilities of the SDMAs are similar at the state level, as of the NDMA at the national level. SDMAs formulate state policy; and approve state disaster management plan prepared by the state executive committees (SECs), concerned ministries/ departments, and district disaster management authorities (DDMAs). SDMAs also issue guidelines to respective state govt ministries/ departments for dovetailing measures in developmental plans to ensure DRR and disaster risk mitigation. SDMAs are also required to assess vulnerabilities and state of preparedness for disaster response. They also carry out the periodical review to ensure the availability of adequate funds for capacity development, and all other aspects pertaining to preparation for disaster management (Govt of India, 2005, p. 9).

At the national level, Home Secretary of Central Govt. is the Chairman of National Executive Committee (NEC) of India. Secretaries of concerned ministries/ departments; and Chief of Integrated Defence Staff of the Chief of Staff Committee; are the members of the NEC. The NEC renders assistance to NDMA in all the aspects related to DM. NEC also prepares and revises national plan; coordinates and monitors implementation of various policies, guidelines, and plans issued by NDMA, as also by the concerned central ministries/ department. NEC also assists concerned central ministries/departments and SDMAs for preparing their respective DM plans. Briefly, it may be concluded that NEC has overall responsibility in the entire sphere concerning DM, including assessment of preparedness, capacity building, and coordination of activities of all concerned, at all level (Govt of India, 2005, pp. 7-8).

At the state level, chief secretaries are the chairmen of state executive committees (SECs). The states have laid down role, responsibility, and authority for their respective SECs. However, SECs are required to ensure coordination and implementation of the national plan and are also responsible to prepare, coordinate and ensure implementation of state plans. SECs are also required to coordinate plans prepared by different central, and state ministries/departments. They are also required to evaluate vulnerabilities specific to location and type of disasters, and to carry out an assessment of the state of preparedness in order to ensure measures for DRR, prevention, and mitigation, at all level. SECs are also responsible for capacity building to include, creation and maintenance of training institutions, awareness and knowledge management, training down to the community level, and

coordination amongst all respondents at all levels. Powers and functions of SECs related to rescue and relief during disasters are outlined in Section 24 of the DMA Act (Govt of India, 2005, pp. 10-12).

Similarly, at the district level, District Disaster Management Authorities (DDMAs) headed by respective District Magistrate (DM)/ Deputy Commissioner (DC), have been established. DDMA's are responsible to prepare, coordinate, and implement district disaster management plans (DDMPs) down to community level in accordance with the state and national plan. DDMA's are required to identify and assess vulnerabilities; and to issue guidelines related to prevention, DRR, mitigation, capacity building and preparedness, and coordination; as also to monitor all the activities pertaining to DM, down to local bodies and community level (Govt of India, 2005, pp. 13-15).

On 22 October 2009, the Indian Union Cabinet approved National Policy on Disaster Management, which laid down the national vision of making disaster resilient country through a technology-driven and integrated proactive strategy, catering for all types of disasters. The policy also aimed at promoting an environment for prevention, mitigation, preparedness and effective response for all types of disasters, at all levels. The policy lays emphasis on community-based integrated, inclusive and participative approach for DM planning and execution. The policy calls for capacity development at all levels, giving due weight to past efforts and experiences as also for cooperation with national and international agencies, and synergy across the sectors for DM (Govt of India, 2009, p.7). The National Policy clarifies that NDMA will deal with only natural and manmade disasters. However, the National Crisis Management Committee (NCMC) will continue to deal with all other emergencies, which require the participation of security and intelligence agencies. Emergencies related to terrorism, law and order, air accidents, CBRN weapon systems, mine disasters, port and harbour emergencies, hijacking, a spill of oils within maritime boundaries, fire in the forest etc., come under this category (Govt of India, 2009, p. 9). The National Policy also covers other important aspects such as maintenance of mitigation reserves at crucial locations; role of Armed Forces, NDRF, Central and State Police Force, Fire Services, Civil Defence, Home Guard, (SDRF), National Cadet Core (NCC), National Services Scheme (NSS), and Nehru Yuvak Kendra Sangathan (NYKS); and international cooperation (Govt of India, 2009, pp. 25-26)

The National Policy also contains comprehensive instruction on disaster prevention and mitigation to include, risk assessment and vulnerability mapping, monitoring and ensuring safety standards for critical structures, such as dams, roads, bridges, flyovers, railway lines, power stations, water storage towers, and other civil utilities. It also covers aspects related to institutional, legal and financial arrangements and techno-legal regime. The policy also contains aspects related to response relief and rehabilitation, reconstruction and recovery, knowledge management and dissemination, and research and development (National Policy, 2009). As per the mandate of the DM Act, detailed guidelines for the management of various disasters have been issued by NDMA. These guidelines pertain to the preparation of state disaster management plans, and management of all natural, CBRN and industry related disasters. These elaborate guidelines have been issued over the course of intense deliberations and consultation of one decade, commencing from 2007. List of some of these guidelines is given in NDMP 2016 (Govt of India, 2016, p.151).

After due deliberations, National Disaster Management Plan (NDMP) prepared by NEC, was approved by NDMA in May 2016. The NDMP 2016 is a very exhaustive and ambitious plan. The priorities and targets of the Sendai Framework have been completely factored into the plan. It is dynamic in nature, and open to amendments. Themes and responsibilities for all aspect of DM in respect of all the disasters including cyclones and winds, floods, urban flooding, earthquakes, tsunami, landslides and snow avalanches, droughts, cold wave and frost, chemical (industrial) disasters, nuclear and radiological emergencies, and fire have been elaborated in the NDMP. Respective nodal ministries/departments of central and state govt. are required to prepare a detailed risk mitigation plan and ensure implementation (Govt of India, 2016, pp. 34-89). The NDMP also covers national profile for various hazards, risks, and vulnerabilities. It has also designated the agencies (ministries/ departments) responsible for early warning for specific hazard as also, for coordinating disaster response at the national level (Govt of India, 2016, pp.97-98).

As per the National Policy, primarily, states are responsible for disaster management including response to disasters. However, central assistance is rendered on a specific request from the affected state govt. The MHA is responsible for disaster response in Union territories (UTs). Central Agencies also get involved directly where Govt. of India has primary jurisdiction, such as international assistance for responding to disasters in high seas, taking help of international agencies for assessing the impact of disasters and providing financial help from the National Disaster Response Fund to states. As per the stated national policy, India considers itself self-sufficient to deal with any kind of disasters, hence does not require any foreign assistance. India never appeals for disaster response from other countries. However, volunteer assistance as a goodwill gesture from a foreign country is considered by the MHA, and if accepted, the same is routed in consultation with govt of the affected state. Assistance offered by UN agencies is evaluated by the NDMA/MHA, keeping in view the need for the same. If the need is felt, the nodal ministries/departments of Central Govt and the govt of the affected state coordinate the UN relief efforts (Govt of India, 2016, pp. 101-104).

Some of the measures for disaster risk governance envisaged in NDMP 2016, fall under short-term, which is to be completed within five years, some under medium terms, required to be completed within ten years, and some under long-term, for completion within 15 years. However, some of these measures may be implemented simultaneously. Similarly, recovery from disaster is also envisaged in three stages. Activities related to early stage of recoveries such as cash for work programme, resumption of economic and commercial activities, construction of temporary shelters and resumption of social services, are required to be completed within 3 to 18 months. Recovery of livelihood and re-construction of houses and other critical infrastructure which may take up to five years, come under midterm recovery stage. Long-term recovery stage entails dovetailing DM measures in developmental plans which may take up to 10 years for implementation (Govt of India, 2016, pp.116-124).

As far as the financial aspects are concerned, provisions for disaster response funds and disaster mitigation funds have been made at national, state and district level (Govt of India, 2005, p. 23). State Disaster Response Fund is used to meet the expenditure for response and recovery by the state

govts., during and post disasters. However, assistance may also be provided from National Disaster Response Fund, if need be. States may also utilise 10% of State Disaster Fund for capacity development (Govt of India, 2016, pp. 137-138). In spite of clear provisions for National Mitigation Funds in DM Act 2005, the same has not been notified as yet. The fourteenth Finance Commission is silent about this fund. However, for meaningful mainstreaming of disaster risk reduction (DRR) measures, separate mitigation funds are essential at the centre and state level. As of now disaster response funds are used for response, relief and recovery only, and cannot be used for disaster preparedness, mitigation, restoration and reconstruction (Govt of India, 2016, pp. 139-141).

Presently DRR in India is being carried out through various plan schemes undertaken through ministries/department of Central Govt. and states govts. The schemes are dedicated and aimed at prevention, mitigation and capacity building etc. Some of these schemes are: strengthening of Fire and Emergencies Services, and Administrative Training Institutes (ATIs) and other training institutions for DM funded through MHA; Integrated Coastal Zone Management Scheme of Ministry of Environment, Forest and Climate Change (MoEFCC); Flood Management and Forecasting Programmes of Ministry of Water Resources (MoWR); DM Support Programme of Department of Science (DoS); Tsunami and Storm Surge Warning System Project of Ministry of Environment Science. The National Cyclone Risk Mitigation Project and The Coastal Risk Reduction Project of the World Bank; are being implemented through NDMA. DRR is embedded in many other programmes and project which are being implemented by various ministries/departments. Social schemes such as Mahatma Gandhi National Rural Employment Guarantee Scheme (MGNREGS) and the Urban Renewal Mission have embedded DRR to improve community resilience. For reconstruction after any disaster, Central Govt. ensures increased outlay of funds for building back better (BBB) (Govt of India, 2016, p. 142). A study conducted by the International Institution of Environment Development concluded that MGNREGS did bring in absorptive, adaptive and transformative resilience to rural households of cyclone-prone areas of Andhra Pradesh. The study further brings out that if other climate risk management programmes to create assets such as shelter belts and mangroves by Forest or Horticulture Department, are also integrated with (MGNREGS), it will further enhance effective mainstreaming of DRR into the social schemes (Steinbach, et al. 2016, pp. 5-6 & 151).

After five major disasters between 2013 and 2015, that is Uttarakhand Floods, Cyclone Phailin, Cyclone Hudhud, Floods in J&K and Chennai, World Bank as part of DRR measures did a quick damage assessment to ascertain the recovery course. Subsequently, recovery and reconstruction projects incorporating long-term resilience and emergency response capacity are under implementation. Besides these programmes, world bank-supported projects have also been undertaken for recovery and reconstruction of infrastructure damage during Kosi River flood in 2008, and for development of Kosi Basin to increase resilience to floods and to enhance agriculture products and productivity along the basin in Bihar. World Bank is also supporting a knowledge creation and management programme for five states to include Andhra Pradesh, Gujarat, Orissa, Tamil Nadu and West Bengal (World Bank, 2016).

For proper control and coordination two National Emergency Operation Centres (NEOCs) have

been established. NEOC1 is under MHA, and NEOC2 is under NDMA. State and district emergency operation centres, agencies earmarked to provide early warning, NDRF, Integrated Defence Staff, Central Armed Police Forces and MEA is connected to these NEOs. Elaborate guidelines have been issued by NDMA for Incidence Response System, and Information and Communication System in 2010 and 2012 respectively, to ensure robust command, control and coordination system (Govt of India, 2016, pp.95 & 151).

Findings of the Study and Policy Recommendations

The perusal of NDMP 2016 reveals that it enables scalable implementation and vertical and horizontal integration of all govt. agencies right from Central Govt. to panchayats and urban local bodies. However, the plan was criticised by Chakrabarti immediately on its release, through an article in Hindustan Times. He brought out that the national plan has many drawbacks. Firstly, the plan lacks clear and implementable roadmap, besides being too generic in identifying the activities required to be undertaken by both central and state govts for DRR, risk governance, preparedness, response, recovery, and reconstruction. Secondly, the plan does not provide a specific timeframe for the implementation of these activities. The time frame is vaguely mentioned in terms of short, medium, mid- and long-term basis. Thirdly, there is no mention of funds and their sources, required for these activities. He also brought out that the plan lacks a framework for its monitoring and evaluation. As per him the plan was hurriedly prepared to ward off the criticism by Supreme Court for undue delay in formulating the same. He further commented that, though the plan is aligned with the Sendai Framework but does not specify its goals and targets to achieve the goals and targets of the Sendai framework (Chakrabarti, 2016). To a large extent, these are very valid issues.

While NDMP, 2016 was under preparation, many states had already prepared SDMPs. Study report of a research initiated by Climate Development Knowledge Network (CDKN), to assess the state of SDMPs of five states mentioned earlier, brought out that the SDMPs adequately cater for response aspects of disaster management, but lack prominence and role clarity for disaster risk management (DRM), DRR, and disaster resilience. The report also indicated that in spite of legal mandate accorded by DM Act 2005, fund constraints for DRR prevail across all the states, which need to be addressed. Public-private partnership (PPP), and provisions for risk transfer mechanism as an alternate source of funding are also not catered in the SDMPs. These plans use the Vulnerability Atlas of India, which though, helps identification of exposures in terms of geographic area, but falls short of determining the socio-economic vulnerabilities, which are also considered essential inputs for DRM. SDMPs have also not included the aspects related to climate change. The Sendai Framework has also not been factored in these plans. However, the study also appreciated various measures initiated by these states to address these shortcomings (Bahadur, Lovell, and Pichon, 2016).

The minutes of roundtable conference organised by VIF and PPF, on India's disaster response mechanism brought out that existing disaster management framework does not allow private organisations to link their corporate social responsibility (CSR) funds with the DM funds legally, which results in non-utilisation of these funds. Many other shortcomings pertaining to disaster response including neglected state of Civil Defence and Fire Services, organisational deficiencies of NDRF in

terms of specialised training and equipment, lack of involvement and integration of Armed Forces in planning during preparedness stage, and lack of preparedness for handling mass casualty events (MCE) were highlighted in this conference (VIF and PPF, 2016). A report on governance and legal compliance regarding 2018 Kerala Floods, conducted by Special Centre for Disaster Research at JNU, in collaboration with NIDM, brought out many shortcomings on preparedness and DRR measures in developmental activities, including lack of preparatory technology drills, improper dam management, inadequate preparation and maintenance of database, inadequate capacity development, inadequate disaster warning and dissemination system, lack of social inclusion and most importantly blatant neglect and defiance of orders and reports of the highest ecological, judiciary and audit authorities (Singh et al., 2018).

Notwithstanding, the NDMP was presented during UNISDR meet at Cancun, Mexico in May 2017, which was attended by 176 countries, 50 ministers from various countries and seven head of the states. The head of communication at UNISDR, Mr Mc Clean remarked that India is the only country which has prepared a national plan, and has drawn out strategies at national and state level for disaster risk reduction in accordance with Sendai Framework, (Thakur, 2017). Champions of the Earth award received by Indian Prime minister from UN General Secretary Mr Antonio Guterres on 04 October, 2018, is a testimony to national commitments and initiatives towards making disaster resilient country. By and large, India has made result-oriented efforts for compliance of Yokohama Strategy, Hyogo Framework, and Sendai Framework. Few climate resilient programmes initiated under UNISDR, India, are under implementation. These programmes include Climate Resilient Water Management (CRWM) (Javes, et al., 2018) undertaken by Action on Climate Today (ACT) for five South Asian Countries including India, Cool Roofs Program for Indian Cities under the aegis of Natural Resources Defence Council (NRDC) (Jaiswal et al., 2018) and a programme for Role of Waterways in promoting Urban Resilience for Kochi city (Aziz, et al., 2018), etc.

India has come a long way from purely relief-oriented disaster response to multi-dimensional and multi-sectoral disaster management, for all type of disasters. Having legislated a robust institutional, legal and financial framework for holistic disaster management the country has accelerated its pace for disaster reduction, mitigation and disaster risk management. However, a lot remains to be done in order to make the country disaster resilient. It is essential that the disaster management plan at all levels from national to panchayats and urban local bodies are aligned to Sendai Framework to give desired impetus to disaster risk reductions. The entire framework should be reviewed to identify shortcomings in all the stages of disaster management cycle, objectively, keeping in mind the feasibility, and practicality aspects in the implementation of plans, including the availability of funds, to make the country disaster resilient. More importantly, political and institutional inertia should not be allowed to make the effective disaster management to degenerate into captivity. Better coordination, avoidance of duplicity and overlap of responsibilities, and accountability mechanism across all measures is a must for holistic disaster management. It is also an urgent need to develop public-private partnership modalities for disaster management as an alternate source of funding. Also, risk transfer mechanism and insurance schemes should be instituted to support funding for risk reduction.

Training on DRR to officials engaged in DM at all levels is very important and must be imparted to make them understand the process of mainstreaming the DRR in developmental projects. Risk identification and assessment is another important aspect of DRR. Hence more focused efforts are required to understand the vulnerabilities and exposure in a given social, economic and political environment.

Early warning, forecasting and monitoring are very important for an effective and efficient response to any disaster. In India, the early warning system for some natural disasters, are in place. Efficacy of the cyclone warning system has been put to test during recent cyclones and has been found reasonably useful. However, with the availability of state-of-the-art technologies including space and information and communication technologies, the disaster warning system (DWS) can become more accurate in terms of time, location and likely duration of disaster as also the extent of the damage. Last mile connectivity and delivery of warning and forecast information in a language and format, which can be understood by the affected community, must be ensured. No effective early warning for earthquake could be developed so far, across the world. However, Chinese and Japanese scientists have tried to develop an earthquake early warning system through abnormal animal behaviours (Vasudeva, 2017, pp. 969-974). India should also step up research to build upon old traditional wisdom for disaster warning and management. Lastly, climate change is taking a heavy toll on humanity and its all associated sphere. Recently, apart from Kerala floods in August, 2018, glimpses of erratic climatic conditions were more than visible in May 2018 when hundreds of people lost their lives and thousands were affected due to storm and lightning across the country. Hence making the country climate resilient is urgently needed. DM plans at all levels must include and support DRR initiatives for making the communities in both urban and local areas climate resilient. In this regard, Prime Minister's Agenda10 for India's Disaster Risk Management Roadmap to Climate Resilient and Sustainable Development is laudable and must be made to see the light of the day.

References

- Cabinet Office, Japan. (2015). White Paper Disaster Management in Japan. http://www.bousai.go.jp/kaigirep/hakusho/pdf/WP2015_DM_Full_Version.pdf.
- Chakrabarti, PG Dhar. (2016). The new National Disaster Management Plan has several flaws. Hindustan Times, June, 15.
- Centre for Research on Epidemiology of Disasters (CRED). (2013) Annual Disaster Statistical Review. The Number and Trends, (Brussels: Universite Catholique de Louvain). Centre for Research on Epidemiology of Disasters (CRED). (2016). Annual Disaster Statistical Review. The Number and Trends, (Brussels: Universite Catholique de Louvain).
- Dagur, OS. "Armed Forces in Disaster management: Perspective on functional Aspect of Role, Training, and Equipment". Manekshaw Paper, no. 4 (2008). Centre for Land Warfare, New Delhi).
- Govt. of India. (2005). The Disaster Management Act 2005. New Delhi: Ministry of Law and Justice, Gazette of India. <http://www.ndma.gov.in/en/disaster.html>.

- Govt. of India. (2009). National Policy on Disaster Management. New Delhi: NDMA, MHA.
- Govt. of India. (2011). Disaster Management in India. New Delhi: MHA.
- Govt. of India. (2016). National Disaster Management Plan. New Delhi: NDMA.
- Govt. of India. (1998). Natural Disaster Management in India (Country Report). New Delhi: Ministry of Agriculture. www.adrc.asia/countryreport/IND/INDeng98/index.html. (accessed, May 09, 2018).
- Govt. of India. (1999). IDNDR Indian Experiences and Initiatives. [www.droughtmanagement. Info/ literature/IDNDR_indian_experience_and_initiatives_ 1999.pdf](http://www.droughtmanagement.info/literature/IDNDR_indian_experience_and_initiatives_1999.pdf).
- Govt of India. The Report of High-Power Committee (HPC) on National Centre for Disaster Management, 2002 [https://www.ijirset.com /upload/2017/July/626Final%20Manuscript%20IJIRSET%20ID%20IJ60707048.pdf](https://www.ijirset.com/upload/2017/July/626Final%20Manuscript%20IJIRSET%20ID%20IJ60707048.pdf) (accessed, December 17, 2018)
- Gupta, Anil K, Shashikant Chopde, Swati Singh, Shiraz A Wajih, and Sakshi Katyal. (2017). Prime Minister's Agenda 10: India's Disaster Risk Management Roadmap to Climate Resilient and Sustainable Development. [Http://www.indiaenvironmentportal.org.in/files/file/India% E2%80%99s %20Disaster%20Risk% 20Management.pdf](http://www.indiaenvironmentportal.org.in/files/file/India%E2%80%99s%20Disaster%20Risk%20Management.pdf) (accessed, December 25, 2018)
- Iyer, N. C. Trans. (1884). Brihat Samhita of Varaha Mihira. Maudra: The South Indian Press.
- Jaiswal, A., Bhagavatula L., Ruehl, H., Awasthi, A., Kwatra, S., Sarkar, S. (May 2018). Cool Roofs: Protecting Local Communities and Saving Energy. Issue Brief.
- Kumar, Satish. "Aid to Civil Authorities by Army in Bihar: A Case Study". Journal of Defence Studies (6), no.1, (2012).
- Krishna, Amar, and Pramod Damle. "Armed Forces in DM in India: Need for improving civil-military coordination". International Journal of Innovative Research in Science and Technology (6), no.7 (2017).
- Mohanan, Chippi, and Vivek Menan. (2016). Disaster Management in India- an analysis using COBIT 5 Principles. [Https://www.researchgate.net/publication/313802822_Disaster_ management_in_India_-_An_analysis_using_COBIT_5_principles](https://www.researchgate.net/publication/313802822_Disaster_management_in_India_-_An_analysis_using_COBIT_5_principles)
- Patil, Pramod. (2012). Disaster Management in India. Indian Streams Research Journal (2), no.1. https://www.researchgate.net/publication/314216553_Disaster_Management_in_India (accessed, December 27, 2018)
- Raj, A. (2008, summer). Armed Forces in Disaster Response: Role Reappraisal. Centre for Land Warfare Studies (CLAWS) Journal.
- Shamasastri, R. Trans. (1915), Kautilya's Arthashastra [https://csboa.com/eBooks/ Arthashastra_of_Chanakya_English.pdf](https://csboa.com/eBooks/Arthashastra_of_Chanakya_English.pdf) (accessed, October 15, 2018).

- Singh, Amita, Sunita Reddy, Manika Kamthan, and Gaurika Chug. (2018) Report on Governance & Legal Compliances. 2018 Kerala Floods. Special Centre for Disaster Research, JNU, New Delhi.
- Sinha, Amit, and Rajlaxmi Srivastava. (2017). Concept, Objectives and Challenges of Disaster Management. International Journal of Science and Research (IJSR).
- Steinbach, D., Kour, N., Manuel, C., Saigal, S., Agarwal, A., Panjiyar, A., and Barnwal, A. (November 2017). Building Resilience to Climate Change: MGNREGS and Cyclone in Andhra Pradesh. IIED Issue Paper.
- Thakur, P. (May 24, 2017). India first country to have a national plan for Disaster Risk Reduction. TNN, Times of India. <https://timesofindia.indiatimes.com/india/india-first-country-to-have-national-plan-for-disaster-risk-reduction/articleshow/58829054.cms?from=mdr>.
- The Historical Context of Emergency Management. [Http://www.booksite.elsevier.com/samplechapters/9780750685146/02-chapter_1.pdf](http://www.booksite.elsevier.com/samplechapters/9780750685146/02-chapter_1.pdf) accessed on May 08, 2018.
- The World Bank, Global Framework for Disaster Risk Reduction (GFDRR). (2016). World Bank's India Disaster Risk Management Program.
- Tripathi, Prakash. (2015). Flood Disaster in India: An Analysis of Trends and Preparedness. https://www.researchgate.net/publication/292980782_Flood_Disaster_in_India_An_Analysis_of_trend_and_Preparedness (accessed, December 27, 2018).
- Vasudeva, S.P. (2017). Earthquake Early Morning, through Abnormal Animal Behaviour. Indian Forester, 143.
- Vivekananda International Foundation (VIF) and Policy Perspective Foundation (PPF). (2016). Revisiting India's Disaster Response Mechanism: Challenges and Way Forward. Minutes of One Day Round Table Conference Organised jointly by VIF & PPF on May 6.
- Bhadur, A., Lovell, E., and Pichon, F. (July 2016). Strengthening Disaster Risk Management in India, A review of five States Disaster Management Plans. Climate Development and Knowledge Network (CDKN).
- James, A.J., Bahadur, A.V. and Verma, S. (March 2018). Climate Resilient Water Management: and Operational Framework for South Asia. Action on Climate Today, (CAT), Learning Paper.
- Aziz, Zeba, Indro Ray, and Sandeep Paul (May 2018). The Role of Waterways in Promoting Urban Resilience: The Case of Kochi City. Indian Council for Research on International Economic Relations Working Paper (359).

Role of Governor in Center-State Relations: Change in Trends

Ravideep Badyal* and Vinod Kumar**

ABSTRACT

Federalism means distribution or division of power between the centre and the states. This distribution of powers makes the federal government more transparent, accountable and close to the public at large. In the federal form of government two authorities have to play the important role as head of the Union and the State that is President and Governor. Out of these two, governors of the states have a significant role to play in the federal form of government. Governor has to play a very positive and vibrant role in federalism. Governor has dual responsibility in the federal form of government and he has to fulfill his/her duty with high scrupulous attitude and should be very rectitude towards its obligations. Governor is "Constitutional Head" and "Manager" of the affairs of the State and he has to maintain proper peace and security in the state and also has the prime responsibility to act as an intermediary between the Centre and the State governments. But somehow these powers are indirectly motivated by the mechanical approach of the authorities whereby they only use the position of governor to satisfy their political vendetta. The position of governor in India is not secured by the Indian Constitution but by a political will of the government. Therefore, the office of governor needs some independence and protection to justify the principles of justice enshrined in our Constitution. This paper will be highlighting the lacunas present in the current position of the office of governor and will also provide some guidance to make this authority more independent and efficient for future administration.

Keywords: powers and role of Governor, center-state relations, federalism.

Introduction

Federalism means distribution or division of power between the Centre and the States. This distribution of powers makes the federal government more transparent, accountable and close to the individual or public at large. According to the K.C. Wheare, "there are some federal principles that make a country federalist and establish a federal form of government." He stated that (a) both the governments, that is Union and State government should have their own independence so that they can make decisions without dependence on each other without any coercion or force, (b) both the governments should act in their own limited sphere and they must not transgress the field of one another and (c) both the governments should co-ordinate with each other. If a country has all these three principles then we can say that a country is federal in structure. In the federal form of government two authorities have to play the important role as head of the Union and the State, that is President and Governor.

* Assistant Professor, Department of Laws, GNDU, Amritsar, Punjab, India

** Assistant Professor, St. Soldier Law College, Jalandhar, Punjab, India

Out of these two, Governors of the States have a significant role to play in the federal form of government. In India, as K.C. Wheare stated that we have Quasi-Federal government because the State governments are subordinate to Centre Government and in the case of emergency the whole powers rest with the Union. For that reason, Governor has a very limited role to play in the emergency situation. Governor is an important authority in the federal form of government and he is an intermediary between the Centre and the State. Center-State relations are very much dependent upon the role of Governor. Firstly, Governor is a “Constitutional Head” and “Manager” of the affairs of the state and he has to maintain proper peace and security in the state. The state government performs its functions on the behalf of the Governor and in that case Chief Minister and its cabinet does everything under the authority of the Governor because they represent the Governor in their each and every action. Secondly, Governor is also an agent of the Union Government and an intermediary between the Centre-State relations and he has to operate as a connection between the Union and State during the crisis in administration or affairs of the state. He has to play a pivotal role while performing in these conditions.

There are some differences between the position and role of the President and the Governor:

- i. President is indirectly elected by the people through their representatives and Governor is appointed by the President with the aid and advice of the Union Government.
- ii. The removal of the President takes place through the impeachment procedure by passing a non-confidence motion in any house of the Parliament but the removal of the Governor depends upon the pleasure of the President.
- iii. President appoints many state officers under his authority but Governor has no authority to remove any official from the office.
- iv. President also has diplomatic powers but no such powers are given to the Governors of the States under the Constitution of India.

After analyzing the differences between them, the role of Governor is still silent in Indian federalism because states are dependent upon the Union government. If there is a breakdown of constitutional machinery then Governor has an obligation to submit the report to the executive and to give the proper report about the conditions of State from time to time to the President of India. After that Governor has no other role to play but only to provide continuous information regarding the position of the social order of the state. In India political parties are trying to control the authority of the Governor; and Governors in many states also mingle in politics. Precedent is already well settled that every new government appoints the state Governors according to their whims and fancies under the authority of the President.

Governor was very powerless during that regime of single party ruling (Congress rule) and the congress party dictated its own terms and conditions and wanted every public official to run his office according to the desires of the Congress. Sarojini Naidu during her stint as Governor of Uttar Pradesh also considered herself as a bird in a golden cage. Similarly, Dr. Pattabhai Sitaramaya who was the Governor of Madhya Pradesh from 1952-1957 also considered that they didn't have any power except making the late night reports of the Nehru administration and Nehru stated that the role of the

Governor is to make people happy, satisfied and joyful and nothing else. Sri Prakasa and Vijaylaxmi Pandit Governors of Madras and Maharashtra respectively under the Nehru regime observed that the office of the Governor is not so important and it is totally redundant and they demanded to abolish the office of Governor. Professor K.V. Rao stated that the powers of Governors were undermined by Nehru because of the single party existence in India at that time.

The political parties were trying to capture the spirit of the office of the Governor and dictate their own terms without any compliance with the provisions of the Indian Constitution:

When the Chief Minister was from the opposition party the Governor considered himself as the agent of the Centre and when there was government by alliances then the position of Chief Minister was rendered incompetent. This has resulted in the fastidious and adamant behaviour of the Governor which became disputable and debates were taking place on the constitutional powers and role of the Governor in federalism of India.¹

All these powers are derived from the Government of India, 1935 in which Governor was having the supreme position and authority and he had to discharge his powers under the name of the monarch but there was one condition also that he has to take the assistance of the Ministers in Council before using his authority except in the case of discretionary powers. The main problem with the role of Governor is that on one side, he has to work independently without the interference of the state government but on the other side the appointment of the Governor is not secured because it totally depends upon the satisfaction of the Union government and removal upon the pleasure of the President. This problem has to be solved immediately so that the office of the Governor is secured and becomes more independent. Role of the Governor should be more effective and vibrant under the federal structure of India. Otherwise, state governments will start dictating their own terms to the Governor.

How we can maintain the independence of the office of the Governor? How the role of the Governor should become more effective and powerful? The researcher in this paper will try to resolve these problems or suggest some reforms for the betterment of the federalism of India.

Governor is an employee of the Union government and he has only neutral role to play in Indian political structure and he should keep himself away from the state politics and any pecuniary or other benefits.

Does the election process enhance the independence of the office of the Governor? Does the removal of the Governor on the basis of the doctrine of pleasure is an effective one? These are certain questions which have to be answered to maintain the standard of Governor's office.

Intentions of the Framers of the Indian Constitution

During the Constituent Assembly debates earlier it was held that Governor should be directly elected through the election procedure but later on the idea of elections was dropped.¹² Assembly stated that there would also be friction between the Governors and popular ministries. The decision to not elect the Governors and appoint by the nominations would maintain the efficiency of the office of the Executive.³

It was held by the assembly that it might have some detrimental effects on the federal structure of India by centralizing it further. Nehru has partly favored the concept of nominated Governors because he was of the opinion that it would help the Union to be in touch with the States and would eliminate the possibility of separatist tendencies.⁴

During the assembly debate, Alladi Krishnaswami Ayyar stated that if we consider election process for the appointment of the Governor then political parties will start to rally for the elections of the Governors and this would give rise to the elections of the Governor which would become politicized which is not good for the harmony between the legislature and executive.

Dr. B.R. Ambedkar made an amendment and on the behalf of the drafting committee stressed upon the appointment of the Governor by the Executive and not by the election process because it is not necessary for the appointment of Governor as elections lead to more investment. He also expressed that it will enhance the troubles for the country and also the election process is purely ornamental. So, he supported the process of nomination. 'Everybody supported the amendment made by the Ambedkar.'⁵

Recommendations of Sarkaria Commission's Report, 1988 on Center-State Relations

Sarkaria Commission was constituted in June 1983 by the Union government to check the connection or relationship and proper balance of powers between the Union and State government in the federal structure of India and to give proper suggestions or recommendations for the necessary changes within the structure of Indian Constitution.

The head of this Commission was Justice Rajinder Singh Sarkaria and because of this, the name of the Commission was named as Sarkaria Commission. The other two eminent members of the Commission were Shri. B. Sivaraman and Dr. S.R. Sen. Lot of studies, research and discussions were held to examine the relationship between both the governments and finally a report of 1600 pages was submitted to the Central government at that time. In this report of Sarkaria Commission total 247 recommendations in specific areas were passed by the said Commission and during the whole examination or research, Commission also discussed the role of Governor in Center-State relations. The main emphasis was on the role of Governor and provision of 'proclamation of emergency in the case of breakdown of the functionality of SupremaLex'.⁶

The Commission stated three vital roles of the Governor in Indian Federalism developing out of the provisions of the Indian Constitution under Chapter IV of the report which are:

- a. To operate normally under the parliamentary system of Indian democracy as the Head of the Constitution in India.
- b. To make an important linkage between the Federal and State Government.
- c. To work as a representative of the Union Government in peculiar areas 'during the ordinary circumstances'⁷ and 'during the abnormal conditions or circumstances also'.⁸

'The power should be exercised in the general interest of the society or community and for the purpose of welfare of the public at large and it is not meant for any personal benefits'.⁹ Former President Dr. APJ Abdul Kalam also expressed that the office of the Governor has been bestowed

with high degree of independence and he has to maintain this independence by not associating himself in the day to day politics of the country. The Sarkaria Commission laid down the following recommendations:

- a) During the time of the selection of the Chief Minister of a State when the proper majority doesn't exist then, Governor should appoint a leader, who, in his sound judgment is most likely to command a majority in the assembly.
- b) The dismissal of the Chief Minister should not be held on the grounds of "subjective satisfaction" but on the test of the majority.
- c) If the case is related to the dissolution of the Legislative Assembly then in this particular case, the power should reside with the people of the state to settle the matters themselves and before dissolving the assembly; he should consult the leaders of the political parties and Chief Election Commissioner if he wants fresh elections.

The whole recommendations of the Sarkaria Commission were based on the specific situation when the single party in a particular State fails to obtain the proper or absolute majority to form a government and 'order of preference directly comes under the authority of the Governor and this order of preference should follow in selecting a Chief Minister.'¹⁰

Punchhi Commission on Center-State Relations, 2007

After the first Commission on the Center-State constituted under the headship of Justice Rajinder Singh Sarkaria, the second Commission on the Center-State relations was appointed on 27th April 2007 comprising of four members headed by Justice Madan Mohan Punchhi. The other three members of the Commission were Dharendra Singh and VK Duggal (Former Home Secretaries) and eminent Professor N.R. Madhava Menon (Former Director of National Law School, Bengaluru). In addition to these names, one more name was included later on and Dr.AmareshBagchi (Professor Emeritus and Former Director of National Institute of Public Finance and Policy, New Delhi) became the member of the Commission. The Commission submitted its report on the Centre-State relations on 30th March 2010.

After the Sarkaria Commission lot of new developments had taken place due to the open market and globalisation and new challenges were developed in the country. The political and economic structure of the country has undergone many changes and new challenges have come out before the Government of India at various levels. So, Government wanted to make a fresh look regarding the role and responsibility of the Union and State Governments. Commission was appointed to examine the Centre-State relations and provide contemporary suggestions or recommendations for the better smoothening of Indian federalism.

In the report of this Commission under Volume II (Chapter IV), role of Governor has been discussed by the Commission in which they articulated the expressions of Dr. B.R. Ambedkar that 'Governors of India don't have any functions to perform in real sense under the Indian Constitution but they have only duties or responsibilities to perform which are of obligatory nature rather than utilizing the powers independently.'

Governor has no power to overrule the particular decisions of the ministry and

Social Sciences (66)

undermine the role of the government but he is bound to take the aid and advice of the council of ministers and has to fulfil his duties in accordance with the aid and advice of the ministers.¹¹

The key recommendations of the Commission are as following:

- a) The commission recommended the “localizing emergency provisions” during the situation of emergency due to the 'failure of constitutional machinery'¹² in which a district or districts be brought under the rule of the Governor instead of the whole state and time period for such emergency should not be more than three months.
- b) Another proposed recommendation was to give the right to sanction to the Governor against the opinion of the Ministry of appropriate government in case of the prosecution of a minister.
- c) The nominee for the appointment of Governor has moral and social obligation not to participate in the active politics at any level including the local level for at least a couple of years before the appointment.
- d) The commission criticized the arbitrary dismissal of the Governor without any reasonable cause and stated that this practice should be stopped because Governor is not a political football to play with.
- e) Commission recommended that the tenure of the Governor should be five years and can be removed through the impeachment procedure in the State Assembly. They also recommended that before the appointment of the Governor, the Chief Minister of that particular state should be consulted by the authorities.
- f) The recommendations of the Commission were also there regarding the 'appointment of Chief Minister'¹³ during the situation of hung assembly and they laid down certain guidelines for the same. They observed that the order of precedence should be followed during the problematic situation where the single party of a state in elections is unable to obtain the proper majority. Therefore, Governor of a state can sort out the dispute of hung assembly by exercising his powers in good faith by inviting the political party having the largest pre-poll alliance commanding the largest number of votes or the party having the leading majority an individual capacity should be given preference as compared to others with the support of the other political parties or 'Post-electoral coalition can be taken into consideration in which all the parties joined together to form a government.'¹⁴ This is one of the main precedents that Governor has to follow in the case the formation of the Government having no proper majority in the Legislative Assembly or he can recommend 'Any alliance after the elections with few political parties who are willing to join the government and the parties those are left behind as well as independents supporting outside.'¹⁵

It is very difficult to establish the doctrine of pleasure that what things has to be calculated under the doctrine of pleasure but in India “doctrine of pressure”¹⁶ is being followed by the President with the

aid and advice of the Council of Ministers instead of the doctrine of pleasure.

The recommendations are still not implemented by the Indian government in any manner. Commission has recommended new changes regarding the role of Governor but hearing of the government is still pending upon these relevant suggestions.

Functions of Governor as Constitutional Head

The office of Governor is permanent as long as the parliamentary form of government or system exists and question regarding the abolition of this office will never arise in this particular system. We cannot drive out the Governor because there are responsibilities and obligations that have to be fulfilled by the executive during the critical conditions in State either by the President or Governor:

In the Parliamentary form of government, Council of Ministers changes from time to time because of the loss of the confidence in the legislature and dissolution happens. In this situation, the role of Governor comes into picture and he has to play an important role as Constitutional Head for the better administration of the State and to execute formal acts in relation with the outside world and this has to be maintained as well as continued by the Executive i.e. President for the Union and Governor for the State.¹⁷¹⁸

The word 'Constitutional Head' has its own meaning and it states that the Governor of the state won't participate in the administration of the state. He has a prime responsibility to keep a check on the administration of the state and on the state government for every action of the state politics. Governor cannot interfere in the active politics of the state government.

Governor has two major functions with regard to his position as Constitutional Head:

- I. **To support, encourage and caution:** Governor of the State has a primary function to support the Council of Ministers in every legitimate action taken by them for the betterment of the state administration. For the better services of the State government, Governor must encourage the Council of Ministers. Further, in the case of any detrimental conditions which can affect the Constitution or in the case of social disorder in the State. Governor also has a prime responsibility to warn the Council of Ministers to maintain the peace, order, and stability in the administration of the State.
- II. **Right of Appraisal:** 'Chief Minister as head of the Council of Ministers has an obligation to communicate all the decisions regarding the management or supervision of the state affairs, legislative or executive.'¹⁹ 'If some information is required by the Governor on any decision taken by the Council of Ministers headed by Chief Minister then Chief Minister has to submit the report regarding that required information being the head of the state government.'²⁰ So, here Governor has the power to ask the government regarding the affairs of the State.

Chief Minister is a powerful authority and Governor cannot do anything to him because he is backed by a strong majority in the legislative assembly. This makes the Governor helpless and powerless. The word 'duty' is used in this Article-167 of the Indian Constitution which puts an obligation on the Council of Ministers to furnish but as we all know that duties are not enforceable by any Court of Law in India.

Here, the question arises regarding the position of the Governor. The answer is very simple with due respect to the Indian democracy that everything depends upon the personal relations between the Chief Minister and the Governor.

Governor's Role in Law Making Process

Governor has a very limited role in the lawmaking process in state administration. 'Governor has to take a decision to assent the bill or to withhold the bill for his own consideration or keep the bill with himself for the consideration of President.'¹²¹ If the Governor takes the decision to assent the bill then he has to do it as soon as possible but he may also return the bill to the legislative assembly or to the legislative council for reconsideration. No time limit has been defined for the Governor to assent a bill but for the betterment of the state administration, Governor should not reserve the bill for a long time. 'Time limit is not necessary for granting the assent to the bill by the Governor.'¹²² Similarly, 'Governor is not answerable to any Court of Law in case of reserving the bill for the consideration of the President.'¹²³ 'He also has the power to reserve the bill for the assent of the President'¹²⁴ in following cases:

- a. 'Where Governor thinks that if the bill becomes law then it would prejudicially affect the powers of the High Court.'¹²⁵
- b. 'Where the bill is related to the imposition of taxes on the water, electricity etc. that cannot be passed without the consideration of the President.'¹²⁶
- c. 'Where the bill is a money bill during the case of a financial emergency.'¹²⁷

In the above-mentioned situations, the Governor has an imperative obligation to withhold the bill for the consideration of the President and it is a must. 'When the bill is withheld by the Governor then President has to declare either that he assents the bill or that he withholds.'¹²⁸

Punchhi Commission also criticized this power to withhold the bill by President and the Commission observed that six months period should be applied in the case of assenting or reserving the bill because no time period has been prescribed in this Article-201 regarding the assent or withhold of the bill.

Ordinance Making Power of the Governor

Ordinance making power is a unique and important feature of the Indian federal structure. 'President and Governor both have an ordinance making power when both the houses of Parliament and State Legislative Assembly or Legislative Council as the case may be is not in session.'¹²⁹ 'Further, if President or Governor, as the case may be, is satisfied that there are necessary circumstances to take an immediate action and in that case President or Governor, as the case may be, may promulgate ordinances for the social order or administration of state.'¹³⁰ 'During the exercise of this power appropriate authority is bound by the aid and advice of the Council of Ministers and satisfaction doesn't mean personal satisfaction of authority.'¹³¹ 'It can also serve the purpose to unlock the deadlock between the political disorders.'¹³² 'It has validity for the period of six weeks from the date of reassembly of the legislature and he can withdraw the ordinance by himself before the expiration period.'¹³³

Judicial Functions of Governor Vis-a-Vis Power to Grant Pardon

'Governor of a state can exercise its power to grant pardon, to halt the conviction during the period

starts from the conviction till the disposal of the mercy petition or provide remission of the punishment or can suspend or commute the punishment of any person convicted under any law of the state.¹³⁴ 'Governor of the States has the power to grant pardon to the prisoners within the state jails and extraterritorial operation is not valid in this case.'¹³⁵ 'The clemency power of the Governor is subjected to judicial review on reasonable grounds.'¹³⁶ 'Governor is bound and not sovereign with respect to its clemency power and he himself cannot exercise such power without any concern with the Council of Ministers.'¹³⁷

Discretionary Powers of the Governor

- a) Administrator of Union Territories: In this particular case, Governor has no concern with the State Government and he has the power to perform its functions without any pressure and interference of the State Government. 'In this case, Governor has discretionary powers to his functions against the ministerial advice.'¹³⁸ 'Agent of the Union is necessary to promote the national integration and strength and to maintain the national measures in the administration of the state.'¹³⁹
- b) Special Provisions with regard to the Certain States: 'Governor has an important role to play in the State of Maharashtra and Gujarat.'¹⁴⁰ He has the sole responsibility to act upon the directions of the President 'to constitute separate development boards for Vidarbha, Marathwada and for the rest of the Maharashtra and similar boards in Saurashtra, Kutch and rest of Gujarat.'¹⁴¹ Governor also has prime responsibility 'to make proper equilibrium while allocating the funds to these special areas for the development purpose.'¹⁴²
- c) Appointment of Chief Minister: 'Governor appoints the Chief Minister of the State.'¹⁴³ But if the case is related to the "Hung Assembly" where no political party enjoys the proper majority then the Governor may appoint such person as the Chief Minister whom he thinks fit to form and run a government.
- d) Power to Dissolve State Assembly: Governor has the power to dissolve the state Assembly if the Constitutional Machinery fails in that particular State or where State government is not able to perform its functions or resigns from the legislative assembly.

Governor and Failure of Constitutional Machinery

The expression "failure of Constitutional machinery" is nowhere defined under any Article of India Constitution. This expression is very absurd or ambiguous. What are the limitations of this expression and in which situations, this emergency can be imposed by the President on the report furnished by the Governor? The expression has no definition or scope. Even Dr. B.R. Ambedkar also expressed his opinion on this emergency provision and stated that we hope that this provision would not be put into operation by any government and may remain as a dead letter and nothing more than that. Prof. Shibban Saxena also observed that imposition of Article-356 of the Indian Constitution degrades the State autonomy which is not good for the federal structure of India democracy. Similarly, Pandit H.N. Kunzru (Member of Constituent Assembly) also expressed that the petty instabilities in the State legislature cannot attract this provision and if President of Union imposes this provision on this

irrelevant matter then it won't be justifiable.

This provision of Article-356 of Indian Constitution has been derived from the Section-93 of the Government of India Act, 1935 in which Governor had the power to impose the emergency and take the whole mandate under his authority if the provincial government doesn't act according to the said provision and after the satisfaction of the Governor, the emergency can be imposed.

Under this provision, it is stated that:

'on the receipt of a report made by the Governor of the State if President becomes satisfied or "otherwise" which means other than the submission of the report of the Governor if President thinks fit that State government is not able to perform its functions according to the provisions of the Constitution then State emergency can be imposed by the President with the consultation of the Council of Ministers.'⁴⁴

'The proclamation of emergency has effect for two months unless approved by both the house of the parliament.'⁴⁵ 'If Parliament approved the resolution then the time period for the proclamation of the emergency would be one year and can be beyond the one year if needed.'⁴⁶ But proclamation shall not continue after three years because maximum period is three years if the conditions are more critical.'⁴⁷

Earlier the time period was two months but after the 42nd Constitutional amendment, it has been increased to six months and subsequently the time period has been increased further beyond one year after the 44th Constitutional amendment.

'Because the satisfaction of the President doesn't mean his personal satisfaction but the satisfaction of the Council of Ministers as well and he is bound to consult the Council of Ministers before taking any necessary action in any part of the Country.'⁴⁸

The proclamation shall be made by the President and thereafter President will take the absolute mandate to 'exercise the power in regard to a particular state and can also perform the functions of the concerned state government.'⁴⁹ Or to 'declare that Parliament of India can make laws on the State subjects for the people of the State or he can also make laws under his own authority'⁵⁰ or 'to make any other necessary law which he thinks fit to achieve the purpose of the proclamation. He has the power to suspend wholly or partially any provision of the Constitution for the time being.'⁵¹

In this proclamation Governor acts as an "agent" to the central Government. Governor has to submit the reports on the peace, law, and order or administrative affairs to the Union or the President for further action and Governor has to be very neutral. Administrative Reforms Commission, 1966 laid down certain requisites for the proclamation of emergency in States:

Where the case is related to the "political breakdown" in the State which means that State government has resigned from its office and no fresh government or coalition government has been formed in the States after the new elections.

- i. Where the State government doesn't perform its functions in compliance with the provisions of the Constitution and there is a violation of the Constitutional provisions continuously by the State government.
- ii. Where State government doesn't act in accordance with the directions issued by the

Union government from time to time.

- iii. Where there are serious charges of malpractice, maladministration against the State government or in case of any disruptive activities by the separatists or terrorists.
- iv. 'Where the problem of law and order arises within the state and it is difficult for the State government to act upon.'⁵²
- v. 'Where there are continuous defects and change in allegiances of the legislature.'⁵³

'The union government cannot transgress its limits as provided under Indian Constitution of India merely on the ground of political instability but it can be transcendent where the violation of the Constitution takes place.'⁵⁴

The role of the Governor during the state emergency should be very neutral and not arbitrary. He must follow the moral grounds while making any report on the matters of the failure of state administration and he must consider all the relevant issues before recommending it to the President of India because sometimes it happens that out of the personal grudges, power has been misused by the authorities which are not good for the stable and efficacious democracy in any country.

If we delete this provision then maybe state governments would start acting like a dictator also and it should be imposed during the relevant breakdown of Constitutional machinery but deletion in toto is not good for the Indian federal structure.

'This power also leads to the judicial review if the emergency has been imposed on the failure on the part of the state government and "floor test" has been laid by the Supreme Court of India in which the majority has to be proved by the state government as single or by the coalition. If the test has been passed then judiciary can review the decision of the Governor.'⁵⁵

So, many times this provision has been misused by the Union government and State becomes helpless in this situation and it is also detrimental for the political and socio-economic growth of the State. Governor cannot use this power on account of pleasure but has to use it by applying the futuristic approach and inner-conscience so that nothing will happen wrong to the State administration.

Change in Trends in the Role of Governors

The role of Governor before the Independence was same as now in Indian federal structure. Under the British rule, Governors are under the control of the British Parliament and they were just to facilitate the British Parliament and had no power to act independently or to act in his personal capacity. The same status of Governor is still in place even after the independence and the role of Governor is very much silent till now. They are the real agents of the Union because they perform work on the behalf of the Union government. They are appointed by the President by making consensus with the ruling party and ruling party always want a name as the Governor in the state that can fulfill their political agenda and nothing else. As H.M. Seervai explained that the judiciary during the Congress regime since 1967 was committed judiciary and inclined towards the ruling government but not acted as an independent body.

In the year 1989, a lot of political parties have emerged at the Centre and State level which proved good for the office of Governor. Regional parties emerged strongly and they had no concern with the Governor appointed by the opposition party in the Centre and later on, no serious incident happened with regard to the dispute between the Union and States on the issues of governance. In 1998, the BJP government came into power with its regional alliances and during that time the federal system emerged strongly and the similar case happened in 2004 and after that, the concept of 'Co-operative Federalism' came into existence.

'There shall be no judicial inquiry of the Governor if he reserves the bill for the consideration of the President. This decision made the office of Governor more powerful.'⁵⁶ The trends were changing and varying from case to case and as per the circumstances. Similarly, Supreme Court stated that the 'appointment and dismissal of the Chief Minister can be only done by the Governor and it is his sole authority and not subjected to any judicial inquiry if he used the malafide intentions while using the discretion under Article-163(2)'.⁵⁷ Role of Governor has changed from time to time and in another case Apex Court restricted the power of Governor with respect to the dissolution of the State Assembly and stated 'that majority test has to be passed before the dissolution.'⁵⁸

Restrictions were also put on the Governor regarding the "clemency power" under Article 161 in which Apex Court stated that 'Governor cannot use this power without the prior consent of the state government'⁵⁹ and 'if he uses such power with malafide intentions then it will come under the judicial review'.⁶⁰ Governor has been put under the obligation that 'while appointing the Chief Minister if he has any doubt then he has to consider with care and cautious manner and here, the mandate of the people shall not prevail because of the supremacy of the Constitution.'⁶¹ In between these judicial interpretations, Sarkaria Commission Report and Puncchi Commission Report in the year 1988 and 2010 respectively suggested the reforms pertaining to the role of Governor and many of them were also adopted to make the office of Governor more efficacious and meticulous.

In 2010, Supreme Court delivered a landmark verdict in which it was held that 'reshuffling of the Governor is not possible on the grounds that Union government and State government have no synchronization and removal before the expiration on time should be on reasonable grounds.'⁶² Recently, In *Harish Chandra Singh Rawat v. Union of India*⁶³, Supreme Court of India has stated that a Governor must remember, he is not a democratically elected representative. The judgment defines the specific power of the Governor, saying that when he believes that the state government has lost the confidence of the majority, he could propose a floor test and then he sends a report to the President. Under no other circumstances, the court has now held, can the Governor act without aid and advice. Chief Justice Joseph said that court was pained by the center action in the case on the imposition of President's rule in Uttarakhand where the central government was acting like a private party.⁶⁴ The basic issue involved in *The Governor of Arunachal Pradesh v. Nabam Rabia* is as to whether the Governor of the state is to act only with the aid and advice of the Council of Ministers in all circumstances or the Governor is empowered being the custodian of an executive under Constitution of India to act independently? The court said that a governor is not an elected representative, but only an executive nominee whose power flows from the aid and advice of the cabinet. His tenure depends

on the pleasure of the president. Using discretionary powers to summon or dissolve Assembly Session without the aid and advice of the chief minister and his cabinet is plainly unconstitutional.⁶⁵

So, Governor must not have any concern what actually happened within the four-walls of a political party. The Governor is neither ombudsman for legislature nor the speaker's mentor. Justice Khehar wrote the governor must keep clear of any political horse-trading and even unsavory political manipulation. So any action taken by the Governor, based on the proceeding being carried on under the tenth schedule would be a constitutional impropriety.⁶⁶

Deficiencies in the office of Governor

Still, there are certain shortcomings in the office of Governor:

Appointment Procedure: The appointment procedure of the Governor is always under question. Sarkaria Commission gave suggestions for the qualifications of the Governor like (a) he should be a person of some ability and has done something for the nation; (b) he must be a person outside the local state; (c) he should not have any relation with the political parties or at the local level politics; (d) there should be no defect regarding his character. But still, there are no proper qualifications for the appointment of Governor under Article- 157 of the Indian Constitution.

The procedure of Removal: Governor can be removed from his office by the President by applying the doctrine of pleasure. The scope of doctrine of pleasure is very ambiguous and there are no parameters to define this doctrine and what this doctrine actually includes? Whether it includes the charges of corruption, maladministration or any personal equation with the Union government? It is an important question to think upon. The hard reality is that doctrine of pleasure has been changed into doctrine of pressure in which if the Governor goes against the will of the Parliament then he would be fired and that is the sadden reality of the Indian politics. The Governor should be removed by the impeachment procedure as recommended by both the Commissions in their reports and it would be more just and fair instead of the rule of pleasure, Governor has prime responsibilities to perform and he is not sitting in his office to please or entertain the President or the Union.

Conclusion

Governor is an authority in the Indian federal system which has so much relevance but the political parties in the regime have a propensity to not give much importance to the Governor in State politics. Governor is always suppressed in the case where the Union and State governments have no synchronization in working with co-operation. Governor should also make efforts to remove the stigma of the puppet from his character. If he acts freely and uses his powers on moral grounds then the office of Governor would get more security and worth. The problem of attitude and ego always arises in the minds of the Governors.

The election should be adopted in the appointment of Governor as elections held in the United States and Governor should be elected directly by the people. Investment is there but at least we can spend money on good cause. Secondly, Governor should not be from the same political party ruling in the Union because it also lowers the powers of the Governor. Governor should be appointed from the bureaucrats or can be appointed on the basis of services rendered in the field of arts, science, sports etc., as an eminent person. He must not have any political record or association with any political party

throughout his life.

Finally, the role of Governor can be turned into positive one by serving as guardian of the Constitution rather than as an agent of the Union and follow the rule of honesty, nonpartisan and self-introspection during making a report before or after the proclamation of the emergency. Co-operation is more important in federal structure because for the upbringing and to build an institution requires co-operation.

The Union Executive and State Executive must have a proper manifesto for the welfare of the nation. Governor can play more important role as compared to President because development is not done by single hands and in a country having so much of political, social, cultural and economic diversities, States are more responsible as compared to Union. States can implement the Union policies well in the State and Governor can participate in that by having checks on the implementation of the policies in the State government.

Governor cannot force the State government or State legislature but he can direct the government in the framing of policies and this should be included as an obligation of the Governor.

The office of the Governor must be secured from the cheap politics and must not be removed before the expiration of the time period, that is five years and it can only be done if Union government would change its attitude. The role of Governor has changed with the changing requirements of the federalism but we have to build this institution with co-operation. Governor's role is still silent in India. But for a strong federal structure, the role of Governor should be self-determining and self-regulating.

References

1. William Bennet Munro, *The Government of The United States* 674-75 (The Macmillan Company, Osmania University, New York, 1946).
2. D.D. Basu, *Commentary on the Constitution of India* Vol.6 6078 (LexisNexis, Buttersworth, Wadhwa, Nagpur, 8th edn., 2009).
3. Ibid.
4. Grandville Austin, *The Indian Constitution Cornerstone of a Nation* 117 (Oxford University Press, New Delhi, 9th Impression, 2005) as cited in Supra.
5. Subhash C. Kashyap, *The Framing of Indian Constitution A Study* 395-396 (Universal, New Delhi, 2nd edn., 2004).
6. The Constitution of India, art. 356
7. The Constitution of India, art. 239(2)
8. The Constitution of India, art. 356(1)
9. Rameshwar Prasad v. Union of India, AIR 2006 SC 980. Five Judge Bench Decision by Y.K. Sabharwal, C.J., B.N. Agrawal, Ashok Bhan, Dr. Arijit Pasayat and K.G. Balakrishnan, JJ.
10. Supra note 4.
11. The Constitution of India, art. 167

12. Supra note 9.
13. The Constitution of India, art. 164(1)
14. Dnyanesh Kumar, "What are the main recommendations of Punchhi Commission" available at: <http://www.preservearticles.com/2011092814259/what-were-the-main-recommendations-of-punchhi-commission.html> (last visited, November 29, 2015).
15. Ibid.
16. The Constitution of India, art. 156(1)
17. The Constitution of India, arts. 53(1), 154(1). This is the reason that Constitution vests the executive powers of the Union to President and of a State to Governor in Indian parliamentary system or federal structure.
18. Samsherv. State of Punjab AIR 1974 SC 2192. Seven Judge Bench decision by A.N. Ray, C.J., A. Alagiriswami, D.G. Palekar, K.K. Mathew, P.N. Bhagwati, V.R. Krishna Iyer and Y.V. Chandrachud, JJ.
19. The Constitution of India, art. 167(1)
20. The Constitution of India, art. 167(3)
21. The Constitution of India, art. 200
22. Purshothaman v. State of Kerala AIR 1962 SC 694.
23. Hoechst Pharmaceuticals v. State of Bihar AIR 1983 SC 1019.
24. The Constitution of India, art. 200 (Proviso 2)
25. Ibid.
26. The Constitution of India, art. 288(2)
27. The Constitution of India, art. 360 (4)(a)(ii)
28. The Constitution of India, art. 201
29. The Constitution of India, arts. 123, 213
30. Ibid.
31. Supra note 22.
32. State of Punjab v. Satya Pal Dang AIR 1969 SC 903.
33. The Constitution of India, art. 213(2)(a)
34. The Constitution of India, art. 161
35. Government of Andhra Pradesh v. M.T.Khan AIR 2004 SC 428.
36. Satpal v. State of Haryana AIR 2000 SC 1702.
37. Maru Ram v. Union of India AIR 1980 SC 2147. Five Judge Bench Decision by Y.V. Chandrachud, C.J., P.N. Bhagwati, S. MurtazaFazal Ali, V.R. Krishna Iyer and A.D. Koshal, JJ. Order of commutation can be issued without the consent of the Governor because it is a governmental function. But to facilitate the Governor, we can take the signature of the Governor. President and Governor both cannot take decision independently and they have prime duty to consult the Government, that is Union and

State Government as the case may be.

38. D.D. Basu, *Comparative Federalism* 408 (LexisNexis, Wadhwa, Nagpur, 2nd edn., 2008).
39. Ibid.
40. The Constitution of India, art. 371
41. The Constitution of India, art. 371(2)(a)
42. The Constitution of India, art. 371(2)(b)
43. The Constitution of India, art. 164(1)
44. The Constitution of India, art. 356(1)
45. The Constitution of India, art. 356(3)
46. The Constitution of India, art. 356(4)
47. The Constitution of India, art. 356(4)(Proviso 1)
48. Supra note 22.
49. The Constitution of India, art. 356(1)(a)
50. The Constitution of India, art. 356(1)(b)
51. The Constitution of India, art. 356(1)(c)
52. For instance, it was invoked in Punjab in 1959 and 1987; in 1990 in Jammu and Kashmir and in 1991 in Tamil Nadu.
53. For instance, in case of Sikkim in 1984; in Tamil Nadu and Gujarat in 1988 and 1996 respectively.
54. *State of Rajasthan v. Union of India* AIR 1977 SC 1361.
55. *B.R. Kapur v. State of Tamil Nadu* AIR 2001 SC 3435.
56. Supra note 28.
57. *R.L.K. Jain v. Union of India* AIR 1993 SC 1769.
58. Supra note 55.
59. Supra note 44.
60. *Union of India v. Sriharan @ Murugan* (Decided on 2nd December, 2015).
61. Supra note 55.
62. *B.P. Singhal v. Union of India* (2010) 6 SCC 331.
63. Decided on 21st April, 2016.
64. Writ petition (M/S) No. 795 of 2016 decided on 21, April 2016
65. Civil Appeal No. 6203-6204 of 2016 decided by Supreme Court.
66. supra note 65

Tribes and Tribals in Early India

Pallavi Prasad*

ABSTRACT

There is a growing realization that tribes form the basis of Indian history. The Vedic literature makes a clear distinction between the Aryan and the non-Aryan tribes. Kinship was the basis of the political and social structure of the Rig Vedic people whose primary loyalty was to the tribe or Jana. During the later Vedic age the nature of political organization was changing when some communities made a transition towards statehood while others retained their tribal character. Larger political units emerged through the coalescing of tribes. State formation among tribes remained an ongoing process throughout Indian history. The period around the 6th century BC witnessed the transition from a tribal society based on kinship to an urban, state society in which class and caste had emerged. People owed strong allegiance to the janapada or the territory to which they belonged rather than to their Jana or tribe. The second half of the first millennium BC saw extensive agrarian expansion and urbanization of the Ganga valley. The tribes living in the forests came to be looked down with contempt and termed as Mleccha. Despite a suspicious attitude, desperate attempts were made by the Mauryan state to subordinate and assimilate the forest people within the empire. Many tribes were also integrated in the varna order but were given the low rank of sudras. Another mechanism through which some foreign and indigenous tribes were assimilated in the Varna hierarchy was by conferring the status of vratyaksatriyas upon them. In the post-Gupta and early medieval period, some tribes became the nuclei of new lineage-based states. In this continuous interaction between the brahmanical and the non-Aryan popular cultures, tribes were transformed into castes, resulting in Aryanization and Sanskritization of tribal pockets, a process operative throughout Indian history. An even more subtle form of assimilation was happening through the incorporation of non-Aryan cults and cult chiefs into the dominant form of religious belief system. The tribal cults were superimposed with Hindu elements in such a way that both co-existed and reinforced each other.

Key Words: Aryan tribes, Non-Aryan tribes, Mleccha, assimilation, peasantization, religious integration.

Introduction

A tribe is understood, developmentally or historically as a social group existing before the development of a state or outside a state system. It usually denotes a distinct social group bound together by kin and duty; associated with a particular territory; united by a common culture, ancestor, customary laws and language/dialect; in a primitive or barbarous stage of development acknowledging the authority of a chief. There is a growing realization among historians, indologists, and social anthropologists, that tribes form the basis of Indian history and with this realization, sincere attempts have been made to systematically explore the world of tribes. This paper is an effort in the same direction, looking at tribes and tribals from a historical perspective from the Vedic to early medieval times in Indian history.

Before we embark on a historical survey of Indian tribes, there are two points that need to be taken

* Assistant Professor, Satyawati College (Day), University of Delhi, India

Into consideration. One, all of us have a tribal origin. There can be no one in the entire world who can claim to have escaped the Paleolithic-Mesolithic-Neolithic cultural way of life before entering the civilized phase of human existence. In historical progression Stone Age cultures, with their tribal social organizations, preceded the Bronze Age civilizations of the world. In the process of historical evolution, tribal, social and political organizations were a stepping stone before the development of complex state societies. Secondly, we need to widen our worldview with regard to our understanding of tribes. The term tribal, more often than not, smacks of prejudice. The tribals may be living in a primitive stage of development in terms of material culture, but they are more in tune with nature with minimal carbon footprints. Most tribal economies forge an equilibrium with the natural world thereby avoiding over-exploitation of resources and helping in environmental conservation. They may not be literate but they have great knowledge about the plant and the animal world which they use with prudence to live in harmony with nature. In this context, questions can be raised about our index/scales of progress which are used to regard the over exploitative urban-state societies with huge carbon footprints, as modern and progressive.

The world of warring tribes comes alive in the Vedic literature that makes a clear distinction between the Aryan and the non-Aryan tribes on the basis of language and physical appearance. The Indo-Aryan nomadic pastoralists of the Rig Veda, the earliest of the Vedic texts (c. 1500-1000 BC), spoke Sanskrit whereas the indigenous tribes probably spoke Dravidian and Munda languages (Thapar, 1971: 408). The Aryan tribes with their knowledge of horse-driven spoke-wheeled chariots and iron technology considered the non-Aryan indigenous people as ritually impure barbarians and often described them as *mleccha*. In the Rig Veda, the Dasa or the Dasyu, the local tribes who were subordinated to the Aryan speakers, are compared with demons, being black-skinned and snub-nosed, speaking a strange language. They were regarded as alien and barbaric. About thirty tribes and clans are mentioned in the Rig Veda of which five tribes – the Yadu, Turvasha, Puru, Anu, and Druhyu – are collectively known as the Pancha-jana (five people). The Purus, the Tritsu and Bharatas are the prominent Indo-Aryan tribes (Singh, 2009: 187) whereas Chumuri, Dhuni, Pipru, and Shambara are the tribes with non-Indo-Aryan names, mentioned in the Rig Veda. Divodasa and Sudas are famous Bharat Kings whereas Trasadasyu is mentioned as the chief of the Purus. In the 'battle of 10 kings' (*dashrajan*), recounted in Book 7 of the Rig Veda Samhita, Bharata chief Sudas, grandson of Divodasa fought a victorious war against the Confederacy of 10 tribes including the Aryan Panchajana and five other non-Aryan tribes. The text also refers to Arya chieftains with non-Indo-Aryan names, e.g., Balbutha and Brihu indicating that the process of cultural interaction was underway. Kinship was the basis of the political and social structure of the Rig Vedic people whose primary loyalty was to the tribe, which was called Jana. The term Jana occurs at about 275 places in the Rig Veda and the tribal chief-Rajan was called the protector of his tribe. Another important term for the tribe in the Rig Veda is Vis, which is mentioned 170 times in the text. The Vis was probably divided into gramas or smaller tribals units organized to fight (Sharma, 2005: 112). These were small mobile groups of people mostly related to each other through kinship.

During the later Vedic age (c.1000-500 BC) the nature of political organization was changing when some communities were settling down making a transition towards statehood while others retained their tribal character. Larger political units were formed through the coalescing of tribes. The Bharatas joined hands with the Purus and formed a new ruling tribe called the Kurus whereas the Turvashas and Krivis formed the Panchalas. The Kurus occupied Delhi and the upper reaches of the doab, the area came to be called Kurukshetra or the land of the Kurus. Subsequently, the Kurus combined with a Panchalas and they together established their rule in the upper and central Gangetic basin where they emerged as an important polity during the later Vedic times (Singh, 2009: 200). The capital of the Kuru-Panchala people was Hastinapur situated in Meerut district. The history of the Kuru tribe is important for the battle of Bharata, which is the principal theme of the great epic called the Mahabharata (Sharma, 2005: 118). The early Vedic tribal pastoralists settled down and came to be transformed into farmers who could maintain their chief with frequent tributes. The formation of larger kingdoms increased the power of the chiefs or kings at the expense of the tribal peasantry. Tribal authority tended to become territorial. The dominant tribes gave their names to territories, and to begin with, each area was named after the tribal that first settled there. Initially, Panchala was the name of a people, and then it became the name of a region (Sharma, 2005: 122). The tribal society broke up into a Varna-divided society. Later Vedic texts reflect a transition from a tribal polity based on a lineage towards a territorial state, although there were several communities that stuck to their tribal lifestyle. In the later Vedic literature western Anava tribes such as the Yaudheyas, Ambasthas, Sibi, Sindhu, Sauvira, Kaikeya, Madra are ascribed to northern Punjab, Sindh and eastern Rajasthan area and the eastern Anava tribes described as the people of Anga, Vanga, Kalinga, Pundra, and Suhma can be located to Bihar, Bengal, and Orissa. Both the western Anava and eastern Anava are referred to with contempt as mleccha (Thapar, 1971:415).

The middle of the first millennium BC witnessed the rise of powerful monarchical (rajyas) and non-monarchical territorial states (ganas or sanghas) in a belt stretching from Gandhara in the north-west to Anga in eastern India, also extending into the Malwa region. Buddhist and Jaina texts list sixteen large states (Solasa-mahajanapada) that flourished in the early 6th century BC. This was a period of transition from a tribal society based on kinship to an urban, state society in which class and caste had emerged. People owed strong allegiance to the janapada or the territory to which they belonged rather than to their Jana or tribe. Apart from these large states, there must have been several smaller states, chiefdoms and tribal principalities. Two of the mahajanapadas mentioned in the ancient Indian texts, the Vajji, and the Malla were Sanghas or Ganas that had Greater vestiges of tribal organization than the monarchies. Buddhist texts mention other Ganas as well the Sakyas of Kapilavastu, Koliyas of Devadaha and Ramagrama, Bulis of Alakappa, Kalamas of Kesaputta, Moriyas of Pippalivana, and Bhaggas (Bhargas) with their capital on Sumsumara hill. Some of these non-monarchical organizations may have simply been more complex political forms of older tribal formations but with territorial affiliations, while others may have been created through the subversion of the monarchical rule (Singh, 2009: 266). For instance, the Videhas were initially a monarchy but became a Gana by the 6th century BC whereas Kurus, a monarchy at this time, become a Gana a few centuries later. Some of

these ganas consisted of all or a section of one clan like the Sakyas and Koliyas while some other comprised a confederation of several clans, like the Vajjis and Yadavas. The Vajji were a confederacy of eight or nine clans (atthakulikas), most important members being the Vajjis, Lichchhavis, Videhas, and Jnatrikas. Little is known about the other affiliated clans such as the Ugras, Bhogas, Kauravas, and Aikshvakas (Singh, 2009: 262). The Malla principality was also a confederacy of nine clans. These confederacies suggest the existence of a self-conscious political identity among the ganas. Governance in these polities was marked by a corporate element as power was vested in the hands of an aristocracy comprising the heads of leading Ksatriya families. For example, the Ekapanna Jataka states that there were always 7,707 rajas (kings) to govern the kingdom, and a similar number of uparajas (subordinate kings), senapatis (military commanders), and bhandagarikas (treasurers), in the Lichchhavi capital of Vaishali. The preamble to the Chullakalinga Jataka also refers to the 7,707 ruling families of the Lichchhavis and asserts that they were all given to argument and disputation (Singh, 2009: 267). Instead of a single hereditary monarch, in the ganas there was greater sharing of power among the Ksatriya families, a reminiscence of their tribal past. There were still other people who lived outside the state society. State formation among tribes remained an ongoing process throughout Indian history. It is interesting to note that while the major monarchical kingdoms emerged in the fertile alluvial tracts of the Ganga valley, most of the ganas were located in or near the Himalayan foothills.

The second half of the first millennium BC was also the period of gradual but extensive agrarian expansion and urbanization of the Ganga valley. While urban centres and agrarian settlements tended to develop closer to rivers, there were still large areas of uncleared forest, especially in central India and near the Himalayan foothills that remained outside the pale of an Aryan agrarian economy. The tribes living in the forests who had remained at the food-gathering and hunting stage were regarded with contempt and termed as mleccha, with distinctly pejorative connotations in the contemporary brahmanical literature. Technologically and economically inferior tribes such as the Sabara, Pulinda, Mutiba, Kirata, Bedar, Matanga, Kikata, Nisada etc., were clearly termed as the mleccha people (Thapar, 1971: 414). This dichotomy between the Janapada/Ksetra or state society and the Vana/aranya/atavi or forest area is also reflected in the epic Ramayana where a distinction is made between the agrarian economy based urban culture of the kingdom of Ayodhya and the hunting-gathering culture of the raksasa people dwelling in the forest area who were viewed as antagonistic enemies of Ram. These tribes very often inhabited the fringes of Aryan culture and they constituted the frontier people. By extension, therefore, tribes such as the Yavanas and the Kambojas who inhabited the frontier region of the aryavarta also came to be looked down upon as mleccha.

In the Mauryan period, new forms of political, economic and ideological dominance were imposed on the forest tribes. Despite a suspicious attitude towards them, desperate attempts were made by the Mauryan state to subordinate and assimilate the forest people within the empire. This was a departure from the earlier attitude of completely excluding them from the imperial territory. Arthashastra, the treatise on political economy ascribed to Kautilya, the Minister of Chandragupta

Maurya (fourth century B.C.), uses the general term *mleccha jati* for the forest people, though the distinction is made between different groups within this category. In the *Arthashastra*, the term *atavika* is used to refer to wild, savage tribes inhabiting the forest that was a perennial source of trouble for the state. They are described as independent, well organized, brave, and given to looting and killing. Another category was the *Bahrikas* (outsiders) the dangerous wandering tribes, some with criminal propensities. On the other hand, *aranyachara* (forest dwellers) were to be utilized by the state for its defense. *Arthashastra* recommends that the area between the frontiers of the kingdom and the fortresses under the command of frontier chiefs should be guarded by *Chandalas*, *Vagurikas* (trappers), tribes such as the *Sabaras* and *Pulindas*, and *aranyacharas* (forest-dwellers). Kautilya recommends that spies disguised as hermits could be used to spy on the territories of forest people (Parasher-Sen, 1998: 173-91). The political advantages of keeping the forest tribes happy was recognized as the state needed to establish control over forest to procure resources such as timber, metals, honey, elephants, etc., and the forest people could be effectively harnessed as troops (*atavibala*) to be used in campaigns or as spies and assassins for the state. The Mauryan state established its monopoly over *dravyavana* (material forests) that were a source of timber, iron, copper, lead, etc., and *hastivana* (forests with elephants) that supplied elephants for the army. For an effective forest resource management, it was necessary for the state to placate the forest chiefs and pay them off from time to time to prevent their resorting to plundering and pillaging. Still, it seems that some of these tribes did not easily reconcile themselves to law and order and remained troublesome for the state.

The third Mauryan emperor Asoka (third century B.C.) also makes a distinction between the tribal people living on the borders of the Mauryan state and the recalcitrant forest tribes within the empire. His list of the tribal people in his empire recorded in rock edict 13 closely agrees with the lists of the *mleccha* people mentioned in other sources, although he never uses the term *mleccha*. In rock edict 13, Asoka sternly warns the *atavikas*, that is the forest tribes that he has power even in his remorse, asks them to repent and not to expect forgiveness for what could not be forgiven (Thapar, 1973: 256). Issuing threats of violence, the otherwise pacific ruler strongly admonishes the forest dwellers for their actions. But these can be distinguished from other tribes such as the *Pitinikas*, *Andhras*, *Bhojas*, *Pandas*, etc., who are described in the same inscription as adhering to Asoka's Dhamma. Following a different policy of pacificism, these tribes were to be wooed by Asoka's special officers, the *dhamma-mahamattas* and *amta mahamattas*- who worked among the frontiers, in the context of a paternalistic policy where he regards himself in the image of the father and his subjects as his children (Thapar, 1971: 417). In the second separate rock edict, Asoka appeals to the unconquered people on his borders, many of whom were tribals, not to fear him and follow dhamma. He states that his subjects including the frontier tribes are to him as his children. This edict is directed mainly to the officials at *Tosali* and *Sāmpa*, working amongst the tribes and frontier people of eastern India who were either incorporated within the empire or placed in much closer relations with the empire after the Kalinga war. These officers were instructed to inspire confidence among border people and to encourage them to follow dhamma (Thapar, 1973: 258). Despite these efforts to win over people, his insistence on the

policy of non-violence would not have gone down well among those tribes for whom hunting and fishing were important means of livelihood. In Pillar edict five, the king forbade the killing of many species of animals, birds, and fishes and prohibits the wanton burning of forests. This policy could have been a spoiler in the strained relationship between the Mauryan state and the forest-dwelling tribes, who already looked at each other with suspicion. Moreover, it is hardly possible that all the hunters and fishermen throughout the empire had ceased to hunt and fish.

Another important source of the Mauryan period, the *Indika* of Megasthenes, the Greek ambassador of Seleucus who lived in Chandragupta Maurya's court for some years, refers to Indians as surrounded by barbarian tribes. Megasthenes further states that all these tribes were indigenous but they differed in mind and disposition from the Indians (Thapar, 1971: 418). This could possibly be a reference to Aryavarta or the Mauryan Empire surrounded by the *mleccha-desa*, inhabited by different tribes of the frontier region. Megasthenes and later classical writers generally describe Indian society as divided into seven *genos* or *meros* or groups, of which the third group was of hunters and shepherds that lived outside the settled agrarian society. The population of these hunters, neatherds, and gatherers must have been large enough to be recognized as a separate social category by foreigners. Unlike the orthodox Brahmanical texts that assign a marginal position to these forest-dwelling groups, they were considered public benefactors by Megasthenes since they cleared the country of obnoxious beasts and birds. These people may closely correspond to the tribal groups such as *vyadhas*, *nishadas* (forest-dwelling hunters) of the early Indian literature, the *Abhiras* or *Ahirs*, and possibly included the *Kevata* or *Kaivartta* (fishermen) that find mention in the Asokan edicts (Chakravarti, 2013: 149). Megasthenes also states that they had to pay to the state a portion of animals reared or captured by them.

In the latter half of the first millennium B.C. and the early Christian centuries, the expansion of agriculture and state society in the hitherto uncultivated areas led to the amalgamation of existing cultures, Aryan and non-Aryan, including the tribal cultures. There was continuous interaction between the *Ksetra* or state society and the *Vana* or forest areas or the brahmanical with the autochthonous at different spatial locations and in diverse historical contexts. The expansion of four-fold *varna* society in these diverse areas created problems for the theorists of caste as a large number of social groups which were hitherto outside the Aryan social system could not be given a precise *varna* status. The brahmanical lawgivers tried to purge this social problem by creating a complex web of *anuloma* (hypergamy, where the woman marries a man of a higher caste) and *pratiloma* (hypogamy, where the woman of a higher caste marries a man of a lower caste) marriages and thereby a number of new and inevitably mixed castes were admitted to the theory of social order as *samkirna jatis* or *varnasamkara*. Many tribes were thus integrated in the *varna* order but were given the low rank of *sudras*. Some of these can be clearly recognized as tribals who are described as *mleccha* in the *dharmaśāstras* texts. The *Ambastha*, *Ugra*, *Nishada*, *Abhira*, *Pulinda*, *Kirata*, *Malla* are described as the offsprings of *anuloma* marriages and the *Chandala*, *Ayogava*, *Pulkasa* etc., are described as the products of *pratiloma* marriages (Thapar, 1971: 412). These *samkirna jatis*

professionally followed occupations which were regarded as unclean by the brahmanical lawgivers such as fishing, hunting, scavenging, washing, leather-working, basket making, bamboo-working, iron-smelting etc.

The Ambastha tribe is frequently identified by modern scholars with Ambastanoi of Arrian and the Sambastoi of Diodorus. The Aitareya Brahmana mentions an Ambastha king and the Taittiriya Brahmana refers to the material well-being of the Ugras, suggesting that the samkirna jatis did not necessarily have a low economic status (Thapar, 1971:413). The Ambastha are described as physicians in Amarkosha, a lexicon of the post-Gupta period. The Abhira are nomadic herdsmen who are believed to have migrated into India with the Scythians in the post-Mauryan period and are located in the lower Indus and Kathiawar region in the Bhagavata Purana. In the early sources such as Aitareya Brahmana, the Pulinda are mentioned as a wild mountain tribe of the Deccan while later sources like Amarkosha and Kathasaritasagar (c. 11th century A. D.) connect them with Bhilas. In the Buddhist literature, they came to be associated with the primitive Veddah tribe of Ceylon. Ptolemy describes the Pulindas as 'agriophagoi', that is the eaters of wild things (Thapar, 1971:422). The Chandala originally may have been an aboriginal tribe using their own dialect, the Chandala-bhasa (Sharma, 1958:125). But in the Dharmasastras and other brahmanical texts, they are regarded as so polluting that they had to reside outside the village or town.

The Nishada, who is described as the descendants from the marriage between a brahman man and a sudra woman in Manusmriti, find frequent mention in the early Vedic literature too. In the Yajurveda and the Nirukta of Yaska, they are mentioned as the fifth group (Panchama) after the four varnas. They appear to have been a non-Aryan tribe who succeeded in remaining outside Aryan control (Thapar, 1971:421). In the Puranas, they are described as dark-skinned, flat-featured with blood-shot eyes and short in stature, often associated with the Bhila and Kol etc. They are generally located in the region of the Narmada river or among the Vindhya Satpura mountains. In the genesis myths associated with their origin and recorded in the Shanti Parva of Mahabharata as well as Matsya Purana and Bhagvata Purana, the Nishadas are stated to be born from the thigh of King Vena. As the extremely wicked king Vena flouted the sacred laws and holy rites, the infuriated sages pierced his body with the sharp ears of the kusha grass, and according to some versions of the myth, killed him. In order to avoid anarchy in the now king-less land, they churned his left thigh and from it appeared a dark, ugly, short man, the ancestor of the Nishada. Unsatisfied with this result they then churned the right arm of Vena and from it emerged a fair, tall, handsome man, Prithu, who was crowned the King. He was so righteous that the earth was named Prithivi after him. This mythical story exemplifies the hostile attitude of the brahmanical state society towards the tribal people living in the forested areas. It clearly reflects that the original Nishada and Prithu represent two factions of the society who seem to have fought for power (Thapar, 1971: 420-21). The Nishada seem to have been the rightful heir but was replaced by Prithu due to brahmanical prejudice. These myths also show that the integration of the tribal population was never complete and in it were embedded the historical roots of contestation and negotiations across time and regions. However, the Vana/ aranya and the Ksetra/ janapada were neither exclusive nor did they always stand in opposition to each other. Their relationship was often

characterized by complementarities and continuum as was the continuum from tribe to caste (Sahu, 2015:103).

Geographically, the Himalayan region and the Central Indian highlands were largely seen as the *mleccha-desa* as they were inhabited by various tribal groups. The Himalayan region was mainly the home of many Tibeto-Mongoloid people with their distinct language and culture. The Vindhya mountains and their extension were occupied by non-Aryan tribes and their republics up to the early centuries A.D., which survived the general decline of republics elsewhere. The central Indian complex of the Vindhya and Satpura ranges with the rivers the Narmada, Tapti, and Wainganga cutting through them and the plateau areas of Chota Nagpur and Chhatisgarh to the east formed an ideal setting for the tribals throughout Indian history (Thapar.1971: 426). The region perhaps was inhabited by pre-Aryan tribes speaking non-Aryan languages since Neolithic and Chalcolithic times. With the expansion of Aryan culture accompanied by the clearing of forest in the Ganga valley for settled agriculture, the existing tribal population of the northern plains would have sought refuge in the Central Indian highlands. The economy of the area revolved mainly around pastoralism and food gathering with possibilities of agriculture in some parts of the river valley. This could have been supplemented by the plundering of trading caravans and merchants that traveled on the southern trade route connecting the urban centers of the Ganga valley to the ports of western India and Deccan through the Chambal and Narmada valleys.

The Vindhyan region was the locale for the three tribes which came to be mentioned almost as the synonyms for *mleccha*-the Kirata, Pulinda, and Sabara. The Amarkosh (c. 400 A.D.) in its definition of *mleccha* mentions these three tribes and describes them as hunters and deer killers, living in a mountainous country, armed with bows and arrows and speaking an unintelligible language. In the early texts like Mahabharata and Manusmriti, the Kirata is described as a non-Aryan tribe living in the hills and jungles of Magadha but later texts like Matsya Purana and Markandeya Purana assign them to the Vindhyan mountains suggesting their migration from the Ganga valley. The Mahabharata describes them as dressed in skins, eating fruits and roots and inflicting cruel wounds with their weapons. But the same text also speaks of them as riding elephants and offering gifts of sandalwood, aloeswood, expensive skins, gold, perfume, rare animals & birds and ten thousand serving girls, suggesting that they did not have a primitive economy. In Bharavi's famous literary work, the Kiratarjuniya (c. 6th century A.D.) significantly the Kirata is identified with the god Shiva and after a protracted fight with Arjuna, is instrumental in the acquiring of a divine weapon by the epic hero. In Dandin's Dasakumaracarita (c. 7th century A.D.), they are identified with the Bhila and Lubdhaka tribes of the Vindhya and are also connected with the Matanga, the lawless hunters of the region. The Pulindas are described as being dwarf-sized, black in complexion like black tree-trunks and living in forest caves in Bharata's Natyasastra (200 B.C.-200 A.D.). They may have migrated from the Mathura region to the Vindhya due to the expansion of the agrarian settlement in the Ganga valley (Thapar, 1971:442). The Sabaras were located in the Vindhyan region around the Chambal valley that lay on the main southern trade route from the Ganga valley to the north-western

Deccan. An early medieval adaptation of the Ramayana from south India speaks of the Sabara chief as a powerful ruler of mlechha-desa. The Khadavada inscription of fifteenth-century refers to the quelling of a revolt by the Sabaras of the Chambal valley. A Sabara tribe exists to the present day in western Orissa and the Sabari river in Chhatisgarh reflects an association with the tribe (Thapar, 1971:443). However, the Vindhyan tribes lived in comparative isolation up to the middle of the first millennium A.D., largely unconcerned with the derogatory status of samkrina jati and mlechha conferred upon them by the brahmanical ideologues. By as late as the sixteenth century they are mentioned in the Amuktamalyada, the manual on government credited to the Vijayanagar king Krishna Deva Raya, as people who must be brought round to accepting the administration by gaining their trust, a sentiment reminiscent of the Mauryan emperor Asoka.

Another mechanism through which some foreign and indigenous tribes were assimilated in the varna hierarchy was by conferring the status of vratyaksatriyas (degenerated ksatriyas) upon them. Among the foreign rulers included in the category of vratyaksatriyas were the Yavanas and the Saka (Scythians). In Matsya Purana, the Yavanas are stated to have originated from Turvasu, son of Yayati, associated with the Kuru-Panchala tribes, but the term gradually extended to include any group of people coming from West Asia. Among the tribes of indigenous origin that are referred to as vratyaksatriyas in some sources are listed the Dravida, Abhira, Sabara, Kirata, Malava, Sibi, Trigarta and Yaudheya. Some of these tribes gained political importance during the period from the first century B.C. to about the fourth century A.D. that witnessed the rise of a number of tribal republics in Punjab and eastern Rajasthan. Their power can be gauged from their coins carrying the name of the tribe. The Malavas, mentioned by the Greeks as the Malloi, migrated from the Ravi region and established themselves in the Jaipur area. They issued coins with the legend malava-ganasya-jaya. The Sibi tribe, identified with the Siboi mentioned by the Greek authors, migrated to north-eastern Rajasthan and issued coins with the legend Sibi janapadasa. The Trigarta, mentioned in Panini's Ashtadhyayi, established themselves in the Ravi-Satluj doab and the legend on their coins reads trakataka janapadsa. The Yaudheyas of the Haryana region issued coins with the legends yaudheya-bahu dhanyake or yaudheya gansya-jaya. These coin legends clearly demonstrate their political power over the territory on which they had settled and also the use of Sanskrit by these tribal groups to gain legitimacy. This partly explains their elevation to the status of vratyaksatriyas from simply being mlechhas (Thapar, 1971:419-20). In Allahabad prashasti, the Gupta conqueror Samudragupta (4th century A.D.) is credited to have destroyed the power of these republics.

In the post-Gupta and early medieval period after A.D. 500, some of the tribes of Central India and elsewhere began to participate in the politics of both northern and southern India. With the practice of giving land grants to Brahmins and secular officers coming in vogue, virgin lands in tribal frontiers were brought under the plough resulting in the expansion of agrarian economy across regions. The tribal belts were faced with both the encroachments made by the agrarian economy, often in the form of enforced settlements of Brahmins and peasants and also the movement of people from north India. This period also witnessed the rise of a number of principalities on the fringes of the Vindhyan uplands, some of which came to assume an important position in the politics of central India. Some tribes

provided armies to neighboring states while some others became the nuclei of new lineage-based states (Thapar, 1971:445). This was a time when pre-state societies were undergoing local state formation leading to the proliferation of ruling lineages throughout India, a process accompanied by peasantization of tribes. With the emergence of ruling strata from within local societies, local chiefs who often had tribal antecedents were transformed into Hindu rajas of early kingdoms, claiming exalted Ksatriya status in their fabricated genealogies. Lineage names, references to worshipping autochthonous deities and genealogical accounts sometimes throw light on the tribal origins of certain lineages like in the case of the Shailodbhavas, Kulikas, Shulikis, and Bhauma-Karas of Orissa (Singh, 2009:566). Inscriptions of the imperial Ganga king Anantavarman Chodaganga refer to an ancestor named Kamarnava who defeated Shabaraditya, no doubt a chief of the Sabara tribe. In south-east Rajasthan, the expansion of the power of the Guhila dynasty involved the transformation of the Bhilas from hunter-gatherers to farmers. The early kings of some lineages like the Guhilas, Khasas, Chandelas, Gonds, Ujjayanis, and Gurjaras etc., seem to have been successful tribal chiefs who enhanced their political power and were subsequently accorded Kshatriya status by the Brahmins who were given land grants by them. In this continuous interaction between the brahmanical and the non-Aryan popular cultures, tribes were transformed into castes, resulting in Aryanization and Sanskritization of tribal pockets, a process operative throughout Indian history.

An even more subtle form of assimilation was happening through the incorporation of non-Aryan cults and cult chiefs into the dominant form of religious belief system. As the ksetra or state society moved into the vana, tribal cults and their rituals were integrated slowly but steadily within the 'Great tradition'. The tribal cults were superimposed with Hindu elements in such a way that both co-existed and reinforced each other. The local was being gradually universalized and the translocal/regional elements were localized in the process of the transformation and reinterpretation of the autochthonous deities (Sahu, 2015:105). With the development of the concepts of incarnations and manifestations within Bhakti, the brahmanical religion became flexible and accommodative. Various local cults especially the fertility cults devoted to the worship of mother goddess and phallus (lingam) and the Naga cult were slowly absorbed into the dominant cultural tradition. The mother goddess, Devi, in her various manifestations appear to have been the most popular deity among the tribal population. Vindhyavasini, meaning 'she who inhabits the Vindhyas', worshipped by the Sabaras and Pulindas was now recognized as the consort of Shiva. She is said to be commonly worshiped by brigands and the rites involved the eating of meat and drinking wine (Thapar, 1971:431). In another form, she is described as the goddess of the outcasts who bring her oblations of sacrificed animals. She is also identified with Durga and Narayani, both repeatedly associated with the mlechha tribes in early medieval literature like Harivamsa and Dandi's Dasakumaracarita (c. 7th century A.D.). In Vakapati' Gaudavaho one of the names of the goddess is Sabari, meaning a Sabara woman. The Kirata worshipped the goddess Chandika, yet another manifestation of the mother goddess Durga, the wife of Shiva. The Devi Mahatmya, one of the important texts on the mother goddess cult, suggests an eastern if not Tibetan origin for the birth of the goddess Chandi. In fact, a substantial part of Hinduism underwent a transformation with the popularity of the Shakti-Sakta cults and Tantricism,

both with tribal linkages. As these cults found a niche in classical Hinduism, the tribal cult priests were also Sanskritized and were given ritual status (Thapar, 1971:431-32). In case of the worship of Panduranga/Vithoba of Pandharpur in Maharashtra, Narsasimha, Purushottam or Jagannath of Puri in Orissa, a similar process was underway by which local cults were recognized as manifestations of Vishnu. The tribal elements in the cult of Jagannath of Orissa have been well established by historians. The popular cult of goddess Stambheshwari of western Orissa was assimilated in the Jagannath cult as Subhadra. It seems that three tribal cults of Jaleri Penu, Tana Penu, and Murani Penu, worshipped by the Khonds Odisha were transformed into Jagannath, Balabhadra and Subhadra respectively. A large number of local pilgrim shrines or tirthas and temples emerged in Rajasthan, Gujarat, Maharashtra, Madhya Pradesh, Chhattisgarh, Andhra Pradesh, Orissa and Jharkhand, which received royal patronage from the new ruling lineages. These became the sites of the integration of tribal cults. There are several examples of the association of these temples with tribes such as the Chenchus at Srisailem, Boyas at Draksharam, Sabaras at Puri and Kurubas at Tirupati. Local kings tried to legitimize and fortify their power by building temples for aboriginal deities such as the temple of Danteswari in Chhattisgarh, Ekalingaji in Mewar and Jagannath in Orissa. Early medieval society witnessed the Hinduization of the tribal and tribalization of Hindu rituals, motifs and practices (Sahu, 2015:106-7).

From the above survey of tribes, it is apparent that a major historical process of exclusion as well as integration and assimilation of tribes and the tribal population has been operative throughout early Indian history. The territorial hunter-gatherers and shifting cultivators have always inhabited diverse pockets of the Indian subcontinent but the area under their occupation has progressively declined as we move forward in time. There were continuous interactions between the tribal elements and state societies at several levels and diverse locations, right from the later Vedic times. With the spread of extensive settled cultivation and the emergence of territorial states and powerful empires, the relationship between the tribal populations and state societies was increasingly marred by suspicion and tension. State formation among tribes was also an ongoing process across regions throughout Indian history. However, some parts of the Indian subcontinent escaped the march of the settled agrarian economy and remained comparatively untouched by the dominant brahmanical culture. There are still several pockets in central India, north-east and the Himalayan regions that are home to Dravidian and Munda-speaking or Tibeto-Mongoloid tribes surviving at a food-gathering stage, or at best engaging in primitive agriculture. The modern tribes of Chota-Nagpur region refer to the neighbouring non-tribal Hindus as *diku*, meaning foreigners, a sentiment that reflects the dichotomy and notional distance of their tribal world. There is a need to bridge this notional gap and recognize the tribal cultural traditions of prudent resource use as a part of the mosaic of cultural traditions that historically form the Indian heritage.

References

Chattopadhyaya, B.D., [1994] 1997. *The Making of Early Medieval India*. Delhi: Oxford University Press.

- Chakravarti, Ranabir, 2013. Exploring Early India (2nd edition). Delhi: Macmillan Publishers India Ltd.
- Sahu, B.P, Herman Kulke (eds.). 2015. Interrogating Political Systems. Delhi: Manohar
- Sharma, R.S., 2016. India's Ancient Past (Twenty-sixth Impression). New Delhi: Oxford University Press.
- _____. [1958] 1980. Sudras in Ancient India: A Social History of the Lower Order Down to c. AD 600(2nd rev. edition). Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass
- Singh, Upinder, 2001. A History of Ancient and Early Medieval India. Delhi: Pearson Longman.
- Thapar, Romila [1963] 1987. Aśoka and the Decline of the Mauryas. 7th rep. Delhi: Oxford University Press.
- _____. 1971. 'The Image of the Barbarian in Early India'. In Comparative Studies and History. Vol 13. No. 4. Oct 1971, pp. 408-36.
- _____. [1991] 2007. 'Forests and Settlements'. In Mahesh Rangarajan (ed.), Environmental Issues in India: A Reader. Delhi: Pearson Longman.
- Parashar, Alok. 1991. Mlecchas in Early India: A Study in Attitudes towards Outsiders up to A.D. 600. Delhi: Munshiram Manoharlal.
- _____. 1998. 'Of Tribes, Hunters and Barbarians: Forest Dwellers in the Mauryan Period.' Studies in History, n.s., 14(2): 1973-91.

Military Dominance in Pakistan

Shivani Sharma*

ABSTRACT

Since its inception, Pakistan's military has become the most powerful and cohesive institution in the country. It not only gets involved itself in the power structure but also, over a period of time, it manages to influence major policies of Pakistan. This institution of military in Pakistan, through various means and mechanisms, strengthened its hold on political power and strongly resisted slightest of overt and covert attempts in opposite direction. It does not want civilian leaders to interfere in the internal organizational and service matters on the pretext that such meddling would adversely affect the political autonomy and security of the nation. These are considered as critical components that determine the very nature of political system and civil-military relations in Pakistan. During the last seven decades, Pakistan witnessed four military regimes that directly ruled the state for over thirty-three years. The four military rulers of these military regimes, starting from General Ayub Khan to General Musharraf, embarked on an agenda of strengthening the martial law and its related establishments at any cost. With each military coup, the military strengthened its hold on political power and deliberately marginalized the civilian democratic institutions in the country. The military has either directly intervened to overthrow governments or has limited the authority and autonomy of elected governments. Military rulers have deepened the country's structural problems from weak state capacity to economic underdevelopment. In other words, the military has repeatedly intervened to arrest the normal development of Pakistan's democracy.

Keywords: Pakistan, military intervention, ethnicity, dominance, political legitimacy, civilian marginalization

Introduction

The military has evolved itself into the most powerful, organizational and disciplined institution within Pakistan. It has taken upon itself the multi-dimensional task of guarding the nation's borders and defending its ideology, while, at the same time, protecting its own interests and position in the social domain. The business of governing the nation has been nothing less than a complicated balancing act between the elected politicians and the military chiefs. Basically, it is a power sharing arrangement whereby the military wields significant influence over security, foreign policy, and domestic affairs of the country.

The military plays the role of a mediator in confrontations among political leaders, political parties and state institutions when such confrontations threaten the state's political order and stability. Importantly, it is the armed forces interests that compromise a major factor in shaping the polity of the nation, as has been seen by the fact that whenever its interests were threatened or perceived to be threatened, the military did not lose much time in intervening. (Alam Shah, 2012)

Pakistan has witnessed four military interventions. The successful interventions were led by General Ayub Khan (1958), Yahya Khan (1969), Zia-ul-Haq (1977) and General Pervez Musharraf (1999). In Pakistan, the military continues to defy democratic civilian control and it has either assumed

* Research Scholar, Department of Political Science, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

political power or played a role in collaboration with political elites. No one civilian government in Pakistan has been allowed to complete its tenure since independence. Pakistan has cycled between civilian and military regimes of reasonably predictable duration and frequency. Pakistan's military leaders attain power through coup d'etat and employ oppression to sustain their authority. Under military leaders Pakistan was converted from a parliamentary democracy into a dictatorship. The Pakistan's military clearly lies at the centre of country's politics and economy and no important decision is taken in domestic or security affairs without military input. Currently, the military leaders continue to play the role of kingmakers even when they are not in power.

Recruitment Pattern of the Military

With the partition of British India in August 1947, the great British Indian Army was divided into Indian Army and Pakistan Army. Keeping the communal balance in mind, the Armed Forces Reconstruction Committee (AFRC), under the chairmanship of Field Marshal Claude Auchinleck, fixed the ratio of division as 64:36 between India and Pakistan. To begin with, there were severe shortages of officers and soldiers in all categories. It is worthwhile to note that instead of broadening the recruitment base to deal with the initial shortage of personnel, Pakistan relied heavily on the myth of martial races and continued recruiting men primarily from Punjab and erstwhile North West Frontier Province (NWFP) – the favorite area of recruitment of the British Indian Army. In the wake of the mutiny of 1857, the British suspected those communities which took active part in the revolt. They were able to bring the situation under control only with the deployment of troops from other areas. The British wanted to recruit more and more men from those communities that proved their loyalty towards the British. This led to the theory of martial race with the objective to give preference to the loyalists. The myth of martial races dominated the recruitment pattern of Pakistan Army for a fairly long period of time which resulted in some sort of ethnic homogeneity and unrepresentativeness of the institution. Other ethnicities in Pakistan such as Sindhi, Mohajir, and Baloch did not only raise the issue of their deliberate and systematic marginalization, but also termed the institution as a Punjabi Fauj (Army of the Punjabis). The discontent among various other ethnicities on the Punjabi domination in the army poses a question mark on the national character of the institution. However, in recent years some vital steps were taken to make army appear to be a representative institution. These vital steps include the opening of new recruitment centers in the regions other than Punjab, lowering the educational and physical standards for a while to encourage the recruitment in these areas. (Shukla Ashish, 2017)

Background

Pakistan was a part of India before it gained statehood in 1947. The Muslims of undivided India, after the collapse of the Mughal Empire and with the establishment of British hegemony over India had always felt alienated. For centuries they had ruled over India and the very idea of independent India under Hindu domination was discomfoting. (Grover Verinder, 2000) During the days of British rule the efforts of the nationalist leaders to launch a common struggle for independence did not go very far and soon political life was polarized between two rival political organizations – the Congress (majority Hindu representative party) and the Muslim league (Muslim representative party). The Muslim League was formed by Muslims from an elite class in 1906 with a view to protect the interests of the Muslims of the Indian subcontinent.

The Muslim League, however, kept struggling to become a truly Muslim representative party until

1939-40, due to widespread divisions within the Muslims. Pakistan is generally believed to have been carved out on the basis of the logic of "Two Nation Theory". Quaid-e-Azam of Pakistan Muhammad Ali Jinnah is known as the founder of Pakistan. However Muhammad Ali Jinnah himself became involved with "Two Nation Theory" as a progenitor of Pakistan only in the post 1933 period. While the name Pakistan for a Muslim state separate from a Hindu dominated India was first conceptualized in 1930 by Choudhary Rahmat Ali, an Indian Muslim living in Cambridge, England, it was not used until 1945. Even in 1940, the Muslim League's resolution formally calling for a separate nation state for Indian Muslim, the name Pakistan was not mentioned. Choudhary Rahmat Ali and a group of Indian students outlined a federation of ten states and named it Pakistan, drawing the letters from provinces that had a Muslim or close to a Muslim majority. The provinces were Punjab, Afghanistan, Kashmir, Balochistan. Earlier Jinnah was not in favor of creating separate nation known as Pakistan. (Jaffrelot Christophe, 2002) He remained an active member of the Congress. Jinnah and Congress leaders joined Quit India Movement against the British. At this stage, Jinnah was also known as the ambassador of Hindu-Muslim unity. He later joined the Muslim League, in 1935, when he realized that after the departure of British, the Muslims would be marginalized and relegated to a minority, not only in the country but within the party. Thus, he became a, staunch supporter of the "Two Nation Theory" which meant Hindus and Muslims were two separate identities and traditions.

Pakistan came into being in extremely difficult conditions and faced serious domestic problems of its own making coupled with a sense of insecurity vis-à-vis India. State survival became the primary concern of the rulers of Pakistan, who equated it with a powerful central government, strong defense posture, high defense allocations and an emphasis on monolithic nationalism. The imperative of a strong state apparatus was given priority over the need to create participatory political institutions and processes.

The initial problems, especially the urgent need to set up an effective government that could save the new state from collapsing, used to making civil servants and military the main instruments for state formation. Pakistan shaped up as a centralized administrative polity which stifled the growth of autonomous and viable political institutions and processes. The problems of religious leaders have been accentuated by the widening ethnic, regional and religious-sectarian cleavages, proliferation of weapons, and brutalization of society by civic violence. The absence of consensus among the political leaders led the military to expand its role in the political process. Gradually the top commanders along with the bureaucracy expanded their role in the political arena. (Kukreja Veena, 2003)

Military: Final Arbiter in Pakistan

In Pakistan, the military is the ultimate arbiter in the affairs of the state throughout Pakistan's history. The army has taken over power on four occasions in the history of Pakistan. The four military dictators who ruled Pakistan for over three decades have contributed significantly towards the institutionalization of military's role in the decision-making process. (Darshan Ajay and C Mathew Joseph, 2004) From 1947 to 1958, the military had played an indirect role in policy making processes and helped in the rehabilitation of refugees. It also provided aid to the civil authority during the time of natural calamities and communal riots. The first instance which was of direct interest to the military in politics was the Rawalpindi Conspiracy Case in 1951 in which the Chief of General Staff, General Akbar Khan, charismatic and politically well connected, figured as the prime accused. General Ayub Khan's role in preparing the blueprint of the integration of the province of West Pakistan was another

instance of the military's increased influence in political decision-making. The declaration of limited martial law in Lahore to quell domestic disorder in 1953 engaged the military in the internal security and this paved the way for the expansion of military's role. Powerful bureaucrats such as Ghulam Muhammad, Iskander Mirza and Chaudhri Muhammad Ali helped draw the defense establishment into domestic politics and developed military and strategic alliance with the United States supported by the army Commander-in-Chief, Ayub Khan. With the erosion of democratic political authority, both at the central and provincial levels, the bureaucrats assumed the role of the state with willing feudalists ready to play a subordinate role. Eventually, the army emerged as the power broker and moved to take complete control through a direct takeover in 1958.

The second military regimes of Yahya Khan failed to handle the politicized ethnicity in favor of the Eastern Wing, which demanded its share in power after the electoral victory in 1970. The military ruler became partisan and did not permit the Awami League to take over the reins of power despite the clear electoral mandate as it would have negative repercussions on the position of the military. (Kukreja Veena, 2003) This resulted in the breakup of Pakistan. Yahya Khan surrendered power to an elected civilian leader in December 1971 after the debacle in the India-Pakistan War in 1971. The loss of East Pakistan left the armed forces broken and demoralized. The new Prime Minister, Zulfikar Ali Bhutto attempted to reorganize the power structure in Pakistan but he was only partially successful.

Then in July 1977, General Zia-ul-Haq overthrew the Bhutto government, and imposed Martial Law to reassert the dominance of the armed forces. Under Zia-ul-Haq, the army acquired the constitutional basis to function as a legitimate political power broker in Pakistan. He introduced Eighth amendment in the Constitution of Pakistan which bestowed enormous power to the President effectively changing the parliamentary system to a presidential system. The military directly controlled the nuclear programme and the conduct of Afghan War (1980-88) during the Zia period. The civilian foreign officer got a modicum of authority to manage the Afghan affairs only after the Soviet withdrawal in 1988, but senior Army commanders and the ISI did not cease providing significant inputs. The Taliban in Afghanistan is a product of the Pakistan army.

In the post Zia period, the military had only formally withdrawn from politics and continued to play a decisive role in resolving domestic disputes and setting the security and foreign policy agenda. In 1988, a new pattern of 'soft' or 'non-takeover' intervention developed in which the emphasis shifting from assuming power directly, to playing a role from sidelines. The Army Chief became the pivot in Pakistan's post 1988 power structure. The dismissals of the Prime Ministers in August 1990, April 1993 and November 1996 by the President were carried out with the backing of the army chief in a coup like manner.

On 12 October, 1999, General Musharraf ousted Prime Minister Nawaz Sharif in a coup and bought the army back into power in Islamabad. He took various measures to establish his power. He amended the Constitution, established the National Security Council (NSC), the National Security Bureau (NSB) and restored Article 58 2b of the Political Parties Act. He marginalized the political leaders and parties that could pose a threat to his rule. Musharraf's administrative reshuffle policy was aimed at complete control over the functioning of the government. (Alam Shah, 2012)

The Musharraf era came to an end in 2008 and country returned to civilian government. But the military continues to remain a dominant power in Pakistani politics even when the power is transferred

to civilian leaders. Military influence has not diminished during civilian rule. The military still control its budget, the country's foreign defense and intelligence policies with little accountability to civilian rulers. There are certain key areas in which military does not like any interference from the civilian leadership. It is to be noted that the Prime Ministers who tried to meddle in these key areas lost their jobs in no time. These key areas include national security narrative and Pakistan's India policy (including Kashmir), Afghanistan policy, and nuclear policy; control over weapon procurement from outside; non-interference in the military's organizational matters and service affairs; no reductions in perks and privileges enjoyed by the senior officers; socio-political stability; and military's growing economic activities etc. (Shukla Ashish, 2017) The present democratic transition, therefore, remain partial and incomplete, as the civilian leadership of the country constitutionally does have all the powers to manage Pakistan's affairs, but it is overly cautious and restrained in taking a lead on defense and national security matters. Defense and foreign policy issues have nonetheless remained contested issues between the civilian government and the military. This contest if and when settled in favor of the civilian governments would change the character of civil-military relations, and thus reinforce democratic consolidation. (Ahmad Ishitaq and Rafiq Adnan, 2017)

Military and Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI)

The military's key institutional instrument for exercising and maintaining its prerogatives in national security and domestic politics is its premier intelligence agency, the Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI). Its known political role date back to the Ayub Khan era (1958-1969), when he placed his total reliance on ISI for internal as well as external intelligence and used it to keep a watch on political activities and evaluate public opinion. The ISI's organization, resources, and influence received a major boost in the 1980s during its cooperation with the US Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) in the *Jihad* against the Soviets in Afghanistan. Ever since, it has evolved into a formidable organization with deep influence over and involvement in civilian politics, which has impaired the rule of law, undermined the development of civilian institutions, and distorted civilian-military relations. (Shah Aqil, 2017)

Military and Judiciary

The Judiciary has been used by military to provide constitutional cover for their extra-constitutional steps. Each military regime from Ayub Khan to General Musharraf has been validated by the Supreme Court of the time on the basis of the 'Doctrine of State Necessity.' The only time the court ruled against the military takeover was in General Yahya's case. He was declared a usurper and his martial law regime 'illegal'. However, this judgment was passed after he had been ousted from power, and also did not have any impact on the Supreme Court ruling in the Zia case. Again, it was only in 1988, after Zia's demise, that the dismissal of Junejo government was declared illegal. During General Zia's period, important powers of the judiciary were taken away. After General Musharraf's takeover, the judges of the superior judiciary had to affirm their loyalty by taking a fresh oath of office under the PCO promulgated by him. General Musharraf's success in getting the judiciary to do his bidding is made obvious by the verdict of the Supreme Court on May 12, 2000, which validated the coup. (Darshan Ajay and C. Mathew Joseph 2004)

Military and Islam

The Pakistani military rulers have always used Islam as a motivating force, and a source of legitimacy and survival. The military rulers from General Ayub Khan to General Musharraf used Islam as an instrument of their domestic and foreign policy. Under General Zia, Islam was used with utmost intensity. He encouraged Islamic conservatism and orthodoxy in the army. The Pakistan military was motivated by using Islam and equating it with *Jihad* while this strategy was based in the fight against communism in Afghanistan from 1979 onwards, the same strategy was diverted towards India, in Jammu and Kashmir, after the withdrawal of the Soviet forces from Afghanistan. Pakistan was also responsible for the creation of the Taliban with the aim of establishing control over the government in order to acquire strategic depth vis-a-vis India. The Pakistan's military rulers have always used Islamic parties and extremist groups associated with them for strategic and tactical purpose inside and outside the country. The Islamic extremists were used inside the country to marginalize the mainstream political parties and terrorize civil society. Externally, they were used to make the security and strategic environment of Pakistan more conducive. (C Mathew Joseph, 2006)

Military and United States

The Pakistan military has relied on support from the United States (US) to perpetuate itself in power. A close relationship has existed between the US and the military regimes of Ayub Khan, General Zia, and General Musharraf. The military and economic aid that resulted from Pakistan's entry into security pacts with the US helped the military high command to expand the armed forces. General Ayub's involvement in the negotiations concerning Pakistan's entry into the SEATO and CENTO formed the basis for the decision taken by the political leaders in this respect. General Zia was able to utilize Pakistan's status as a frontline state in the *Jihad* against the Soviet Union in Afghanistan to become the beneficiary of large scale military and economic aid. General Musharraf, in a manner similar to General Zia has derived legitimacy for his rule by agreeing to Pakistan's role as a frontline state, as a strategic ally against global terrorism. (Darshan Ajay and C Mathew Joseph, 2004)

Military's Penetration of Civilian Institutions: The Economy and Society

The long years of direct and indirect rule has enabled the military to spread out so widely into civilian institutions, the economy and society that its clout and influence no longer depend on controlling the levers of power. (Rizvi Hasan Askari, 2002) Military's presence is firmly established in all walks of life. It has carved out a role and position in the public and private sectors, industry, business, agriculture, education, scientific development, health care, communication and transportation, ensures its role in the state even if the Generals do not directly rule. Several factors have contributed to this. First, the military rule of Ayub Khan and Zia-ul-Haq, respectively, included their personnel in government and semi-government jobs and civilian professions. Ayub Khan during his rule appointed senior officers, mostly retired, to senior jobs with high salaries and perks in government and semi-government corporations or autonomous bodies. General Zia in 1980 fixed a 10 percent quota for military personnel in government and semi-government services. Besides, the private sector was encouraged to accommodate them. The military also contributed to improving their socio-economic condition by distributing agricultural land and material awards.

Second, the military has been able to translate its dominance over the state structure to become deeply entrenched in the political economy. The military has expanded its role in the economy by active involvement in industry, commerce, and business, developing a stake in the government's

economic policies and industrial and commercial strategies. Army's control of vast industrial and business empires has enabled it to amass sufficient clout in the economy and to develop a capacity for looking after the welfare of its personnel without relying on the civilian government. (ibid, 2002) The most impressive result of more than three decades of dominance over the state apparatus has been the military establishment's extensive tentacles throughout the economy. Each of the three defense services of Pakistan has trusts and foundations with large investments in the national economy.

Finally, the civilian governments at the federal and provincial levels, overwhelmed by the problems of governance and maintenance of law and order, seek the military's support more often than was the case in the past for the performance of their basic function which in turn adds to the relevance and importance of the military for the orderly functioning of the society. (Kukreja Veena, 2003)

Conclusion

Pakistan is the only country in South Asia where military has directly ruled the state for over thirty years. And even during the civilian administration, it called the shots on major domestic and foreign policy issues. This trend continues even today. All the military dictators, after assuming the power, concentrated on one point agenda – strengthening the military at any cost. Due to this attitude, with each military intervention it strengthened its hold on political power and deliberately marginalised the nascent civilian democratic institutions in the country.

The only solution to get rid of the dominance of military in Pakistan lies in the development of civilian institutions which will function smoothly, negating the necessity for a military takeover, supremacy over national security and foreign policy, only then will the military take its proper place by playing a constructive role in the protection and strengthening of the nation state, within the range of its legitimate institutional pressure group role. It is quite clear that until Pakistan's institutional poverty especially the weaker political party base, leadership norm, evolving socio-economic structure, security considerations, psychological barriers and mindset against India, manifested in terms of military and strategic ties with other countries remain the same, the military will continue to work in the corridors of power in Pakistan.

References

- Alam Shah (2011), "Pakistan Military's Role in Governance", KW Publishers, New Delhi, pp. 1.
- Shukla Ashish (2017), "Pakistan Army Institution that Matters", KW Publishers, New Delhi, pp. 2-4.
- Grover Verinder (2000), "Pakistan Government and Politics", in Rizvi Nihal H. (ed), Military Intervention in Pakistan, Deep and Deep Publications, New Delhi.
- Jaffrelot Christophe (2002), "Pakistan Nationalism Without a Nation", Manhor publications, New Delhi, pp. 11-15.
- Kukreja Veena (2003), "Contemporary Pakistan: Political Processes, Crisis and Conflicts", Sage Publications, New Delhi, pp. 294.

Darshan Ajay, C. Mathew Joseph (2004), "Pakistan in a Changing Strategic Context", in Kumar Sumita (ed), *The Army in the Power Structure*, Knowledge World, New Delhi.

Kukreja Veena (2003), "Contemporary Pakistan: Political Processes, Crisis and Conflicts", Sage Publications, New Delhi, pp. 45-46.

Alam Shah (2011), "Pakistan Military's Role in Governance", KW Publishers, New Delhi, pp.10-12.

Shukla Ashish (2017), "Pakistan Army Institution that Matters", KW Publishers, New Delhi, pp.294-295.

Ahmad Ishtiaq and Rafiq Adnan, "Pakistan's Democratic Transition Change and Persistence", in Ahmad Ishtiaq (ed), *Pakistan's Third Democratic Transition*, Routledge Publication, London.

Shah Aqil (2014), "The Army and Democracy Military Politics in Pakistan", Harvard University Press, London, pp.18-19.

Darshan Ajay, C. Mathew Joseph (2004), "Pakistan in a Changing Strategic Context", in Kumar Sumita (ed), *The Army in the Power Structure*, Knowledge World, New Delhi.

C. Mathew Joseph (2006), *Military and Polity: A Case Study of Pakistan*, Security and Society, Vol. 2, No. 2, pp.88-102.

Darshan Ajay, C. Mathew Joseph (2004), "Pakistan in a Changing Strategic Context", in Kumar Sumita (ed), *The Army in the Power Structure*, Knowledge World, New Delhi.

Rizvi, Hasan Askari (2002), "Military, State and Society in Pakistan", Palgrave Macmillian Press, London, pp.233.

Ibid., pp.236-237.

Kukreja Veena (2003), "Contemporary Pakistan: Political Processes, Crisis and Conflicts", Sage Publications, New Delhi, pp. 72-73.

B

BUSINESS STUDIES

Modeling the Effects of Country of Origin Image on Quality Perceptions and Brand Loyalty: A Study of Chinese Mobile

Tejeshwar Singh*

ABSTRACT

The 1990s decade and beyond have been characterized by major structural changes in the Indian consumer market's evolution, including increased competition, increased product availability in terms of both quality and quantity, as well as increased levels of awareness and propensity to consume. A host of foreign branded goods are now easily available as well as freely used. A related trend contributing to these shifts has been the reduction in trade barriers due to trade agreements, and the globalizing influence of associations such as the WTO. The concomitant decrease in import duties of goods, has paved the way for entry of companies from Germany, France, US, Korea, Japan, and China. Foreign brands in the Indian market have thus begun to compete for both market share and the psychological mind share of consumers, even while widening the range of brands under consideration. This paper highlights the impact of country of origin image on perceived quality keeping in mind mobiles made in China. The data was collected from 1500 respondents from three locations namely Delhi, Chandigarh and Jammu and was analyzed using Structural Equation Model. Findings reveal that the country of origin image has a strong impact on perceived quality resulting in making the consumers more brand loyal.

Keywords: Country of Origin Image, Consumer Purchase Behavior, Brand Loyalty Effects, Mobile Phones.

Introduction

In a developed country, consumers in general tend to have a higher quality perception of the domestic products as compared to the foreign products (Ahmed and d'Astous, 1995; Bilkey and Nes, 1982; Dickerson, 1982; Morganosky and Lazard, 1987; Samiee, 1994). A number of researchers have established that country of origin influences the perceptions of product's quality (Heslop et al., 1987; Kaynak and Cavusgil, 1983). Perceived quality is a key dimension of brand equity (Aaker, 1996), which is believed to enhance the value of a brand by providing consumers with a reason to buy. This is so due to the fact that the consumers are likely to hold favorable perceptions of the quality of a brand when it is known to have originated from countries with a strong association with the product category compared to when the brand is known to originate from countries with weaker association with the product category. Moreover, the perceived quality level of a brand varies with the country of origin of the brand, that is, the perceived quality level of Nokia made in USA is likely to be higher than the perceived quality level of Nokia made in China or India, for the product category "mobile phones". This highlights that perceived quality does affect Brand loyalty. Therefore, Brand loyalty in the present study is defined as consumers' intention to buy a brand as a primary choice. Consumers may prefer to

* Lecturer, Government MAM PG College, Jammu, India

buy a brand partly on the basis of its country of origin. This might be because consumers have experienced, or are convinced about, either the features or attributes or benefits offered by the brand (e.g. Nike) originating from the particular country (USA).

Therefore, it can be argued that, similar to brand loyalty, consumers may exhibit country loyalty. Moreover, country of origin effects in one product category are known to transfer to new product categories offered from the same country (Agarwal and Sikri, 1996). It is noted that country of origin affects consumers' loyalty towards a brand. Furthermore, consumers' product category-country associations are believed to moderate the effect of the country of origin on consumer-based brand equity dimensions. For example, the consumer-based equity of a brand made in a country with strong product category-country associations (e.g. car/Germany) is likely to be substantially higher than that for the same brand made in a country with weaker product category-country associations (e.g. car/Mexico), in cases where consumers perceive substantive differences between the two countries in terms of their product category-country associations.

Country of Origin (COO) effects have been defined in many ways in the literature. According to Wang and Lamb (1983), country of origin effects are intangible barriers to enter new markets in the form of negative consumer bias toward imported products. Further in the modern marketplace defining the country of origin can be a very complicated task. The growth of multinational companies and the evaluation of hybrid products, with components from many source countries, have in many cases blurred the accuracy or validity of "made in _____" labels (Kim and Chao, 2018; Baker and Michie, 1995; Baughn and Yaprak, 1993; Chao, 1993; Yaprak and Baughn, 1991). For example, Sony is a Japanese manufacturer but some of its products are assembled outside Japan in countries like Singapore (Baker and Michie, 1995). With this example, the product assembled in Singapore would be denoted "assembled in Singapore" and that assembled in Japan would be considered as "made in Japan".

Country of origin is thought to serve as a cue from which consumers make inferences about products and product attributes (Bilkey and Nes, 1982; Han and Terpstra, 1988; Kaynak and Cavusgil, 1983; Schooler, 1965). In brief, the country-of-origin cue triggers a global evaluation of quality, performance, or specific product/service attributes. Consumers infer attributes to the product based on country stereotype and experiences with products from that country.

Review of Literature

Kenny lim (2001) while examining the consumer's perceptions of brands as influenced by their origins indicated that consumers can identify the cultural origin of brands over their Country of Origin and that a consumer's ability to make this distinction is influenced by the consumer's perception of how he/ she knows the brand. In a similar way, Kinra (2006) conducted a study with the main objective to investigate consumer awareness and perceptions towards "foreign" versus "Indian" brand names for different product categories so as to examine the effect of Country of Origin of a brand on consumer preferences. It was found that consumers were aware of the increased presence of foreign brands in Indian market. Foreign brands were perceived to be more reliable and safe by Indian consumers than their domestic brands suggesting that country of origin image, product knowledge do affect purchase behavior. Lin and Chen (2006) undertook a study to explore the influence of Country of Origin image, product knowledge and product involvement on consumer purchase decision. It was found that

Modeling the Effects of Country of Origin Image on Quality Perceptions and Brand Loyalty:
A Study of Chinese Mobile

Country of Origin image product knowledge and product involvement all have a positive effect on consumer purchase decision. Also, Al-Sulati and Baker (1998) measured the effect of Country of Origin on consumer perceptions of products and services. Results revealed that consumer perceptions differ significantly on the basis of products/services and Country of Origin. The results also indicated that country of origin affects beliefs but not attitudes and most researches to date have focused primarily on country of origin effects on products evaluation and nationality differences in consumption of a product in a more developed country.

Xiaoling Hu et.al (2008) investigated the effect of Country of Origin information on their wine evaluations. In the study it was found that Chinese customers consider Country of Origin as the most important factor while purchasing wine. It was revealed that Chinese people tend to give importance to Country of Origin for gift giving and wish to buy foreign brands to home brands while consuming wine in public. Also Xuehua Wang, Zhilin yang, (2008) studied the relationship between Country of Origin image and purchase intentions in China's auto industry for the Sino-German Joint Venture's auto brand of Bora. Specifically it was suggested that Country of Origin image exerts both main and interaction impact on purchase intentions. It was found that brand personality and Country of Origin exert positive effect on purchase intentions. COO image is found to be a positive moderator in the relationship between brand personality and purchase intention. Specifically, a positive COO image could enhance brand personality's positive impact on purchase intention, whereas a negative COO image could significantly decrease the positive brand personality effect on purchase intention.

However, Yamen Koubaa (2008) found out the impact of Country of Origin information on brand perception and brand image structure through empirical investigation among Japanese consumers. The research was done on two products viz. digital camera and TV, for the two leading brands of Japan namely Sony and Sanyo. It was found that Sony and Sanyo images are higher when the product is made in Japan and image started decreasing when the product was shifted to USA, China and Indonesia. The same concept was studied by Jin and Chansarkar (2006) while examining the usefulness of the brand origin concept in shaping the perceptions of Indian consumers. Backed by social identity theory and social motivation theory, the results demonstrated that most consumers could recognize the brand origin correctly but the power of recognition decreased when the brand had a long history of localization. However, Paswan and Sharma (2004) investigated the relationship between Country of Origin knowledge and Country of Origin image. It was concluded that Country of Origin knowledge is important for a more informed and probably accurate Country of Origin image. The results also imply that the accuracy of Country of Origin knowledge leads to a more balanced view of the product specific Country of Origin image.

The literature review therefore, suggests that Country of Origin image is one of the key determinants while making evaluations for a branded purchase. Therefore in this context, the present paper intends to analyze this key variable as influence on quality and brand loyalty perceptions for mobiles made in China.

The study is based on mobiles made in China because in the recent years China is known to produce electronics goods at an affordable price leading to an increased preference for "made in china" mobiles. Therefore, besides the developing nations even many of the developed nations like USA and some of the European countries are trying out electronic goods from China. The three main reasons as to why the electronic goods are bought from China are consistent supply of the goods,

better quality and last but not the least the affordable prices of these goods. In line with above, the key objectives outlined for the study are as follows:

Objectives of the study

- * To study and evaluate the Country of Origin image among Indian consumers in mobile phone category.
- * To undertake a systematic analysis of the effect of Country of Origin perception on perceived quality and brand loyalty.

The key hypotheses formulated for the study are as follows:

H 1: Country of Origin image has a significant impact on Perceived Quality.

H 2: Perceived Quality exerts a significant impact on brand loyalty.

Research Design and Methodology

Generation of Scale Items

The study is based upon the analysis of three key variables; Country of Origin Image, Brand Loyalty and Perceived Quality. Therefore while developing the questionnaire; statements regarding all the three variables have been included.

Country of Origin Image

The data was collected with the help of a questionnaire specifically developed for the study the Country of Origin image. The questionnaire used in the study of Country of Origin image was designed on the basis of review of existing literature. The questionnaire consisted of 22 items taken from an accepted 7 point Likert scale of Country of Origin image given by Parameswaran and Pisharodi (1994), where 1 indicated “strongly disagree” and 7 indicated “strongly agree”.

Brand Loyalty

Brand loyalty was measured using a standardized seven point scale given by Beatty, Kahle and Homer (1988) where 1 indicated “strongly disagree” and 7 indicated “strongly agree”. The scale consisted of five items. The face and content validity of the constructed instrument was duly tested. The Kaiser- Meyer-Olkin values for the aforesaid variables came at .872 as shown in the table 1.1 indicated a high degree of construct validity.

Perceived Quality

Perceived Quality was measured using a standardized seven point scale, where 1 indicated “strongly disagree” and 7 indicated “strongly agree”, used by M. Chowdhury and Andaleeb (2007) in their study named, “A Multivariate Model of Perceived Quality in a Developing Country”. The scale consisted of eight items. The face and content validity of the constructed instrument was duly tested by using KMO test. The Kaiser- Meyer -Olkin values for the aforesaid variables came at .881 as shown in the table 1.2 indicate a high degree of construct validity.

Sample Selection and Data Collection

To test our hypothesis, data was collected from consumers in Jammu, Delhi and Chandigarh. A pool of 1500 respondents was selected through convenience sampling technique. Respondents were screened on the basis of the question: "Do you use/own a mobile phone?". A questionnaire was prepared and equally distributed among respondents. 1203 usable responses of completed questionnaires were received for further analysis.

Reliability and Validity

The study examined the validity and reliability and the results are shown in Table 1. Cronbach's alpha values and Split half method has been used for examining the reliability of the constructs. Cronbach's alpha for Country of Origin image China has arrived at 0.860 which reflects the internal consistency. Besides this Split Half method was also used to examine the reliability of the construct. The content validity of the construct has been duly assessed through review of literature and discussions with the subject experts for the selection of items in questionnaires construct validity has proved through factor analysis.

Data Purification

The multivariate data reduction technique of factor analysis has been used for the study. It involved examination of inter-relationship among variables and reduction of large number of variables into few manageable and meaningful sets. Factor analysis was carried out to simplify and reduce the data. It was carried with Principal Component Analysis along with orthogonal rotation procedure of varimax for summarizing the original information with minimum factors and optimal coverage. The statements with factor loading less than 0.5 and Eigen value less than 1.0 were ignored for the subsequent analysis. The data reduction was performed in three steps-1st in the anti-image correlation the items with value less than 0.5 on the diagonal axis were deleted. In the second step, the extracted communalities were checked (amount of variance in each variable) and items with values less than 0.5 were ignored for the subsequent analysis. In the third step, in rotated component matrix statements with multiple loadings and values less than 0.5 were ignored. Factor analysis reduced 22 statements of Country of Origin image of China to 18 statements under 2 factors namely Value for money and availability.

Results and Findings

Demographic profile of the respondents

The demographic profile of the respondents is explained in Table 2. It is very much clear from the table that out of 1203 total respondents, most of the respondents are male (59.8%) followed by female respondents (39.9%). Majority of the respondents are in the age group of 20-25 constituting (65.4%) followed by 26-35 (21.6%), 36 -45 (9.7%) and lastly 46 and above with (3.1%). The demographic profile also indicates that out of 1203 respondents, 407 (33.7%) are from Jammu, 422 (35%) are from Delhi and 374 (31%) are from Chandigarh. As far as the monthly income of the respondents is concerned it is clear from the table that the maximum numbers of respondents (35%) fall under a monthly income of Rs. 10000-20000 followed by Rs.20000-30000 (23.9 %) and Rs.30000-40000 (21.3%). Lastly the last group of Rs.40000 and above contributes for (19.6%) respectively.

Measurement of Country of Origin Image

The raw data has been purified by factor analysis with for which principal component analysis along with varimax rotation has been used (Stewart, 1981) to minimize the number of variables into meaningful factors. Factor analysis has been applied dimension wise and the detailed analysis is as below:

Value for money (F1):- This dimension comprised of 12 statements with positive factor loadings namely 0.801, 0.693, 0.766, 0.811, 0.754, 0.713, 0.761, 0.577, 0.570, 0.748, 0.581 and 0.552. High KMO value (0.940) gave required adequacy for factor analysis and the total variance explained by this factor is about 35% (Table 3). The analysis of the factor value for money concludes that customers do consider value for money while buying a mobile of Chinese brand.

Availability (F2):- Factor analysis reduced the statements to 6 statements under one factor namely availability with positive factor loading values, that is 0.609, 0.637, 0.656, 0.710, 0.658 and 0.710 respectively (Table 3). The percentage of total variance explained by the factor has arrived at 56%. Analysis confirmed that consumers do give importance to availability of Chinese brands while making a purchase.

Regression Analysis and Correlation

The impact of Country of Origin image on Intention to Purchase and Perceived Quality was assessed through correlation and regression analysis. The results reflect the positive relationship between country of origin image and perceived quality.

HYPOTHESES TESTING

Hypothesis 1: Country of Origin image has a significant impact on perceived quality.

The hypotheses regarding the impact of Country of Origin image among respondents has been tested using correlation and regression analysis at 0.01 level of significance (2-tailed). The results of correlation indicate significant values between the variables namely Country of Origin image and perceived quality at 0.828 (Table 4). The results revealed (R) at .699 and adjusted R² at .489 (Table 5) which points out that Country of Origin contributes 48% variations on perceived quality and hence the regression equation thus formed is as follows:

$$Y=a+bx$$

$$\text{Perceived quality} = 1.463 + .699 (\text{COO})$$

Hence, the first hypothesis that Country of Origin image has a significant impact on perceived quality stands accepted.

Hypothesis 2: Perceived Quality exerts a significant impact on Brand loyalty.

The hypothesis was put to test using regression and correlation. The results of correlation indicate significant values between the variables namely Perceived Quality and Intention to Purchase at 0.853 (table 4). The multiple regression results indicated R at .739 and R² at .547 (Table 6) which shows that perceived quality is 73% responsible for variation in brand loyalty. Thus the regression equation so formed is as follows:

$$Y=a+bx$$

$$\text{Brand loyalty} = .551 + .739 (\text{perceived quality})$$

Hence, the second hypothesis that Perceived Quality exerts a significant impact on Intention to Purchase stands accepted.

The regression analysis revealed the positive influence exercised by Country of Origin image on Perceived Quality and Brand loyalty. This proves that our first and second hypotheses stands accepted as the significance of beta coefficients in the two regression equations is less than 0.05.

STRUCTURAL EQUATION MODELING (SEM)

Structural Equation Modeling (SEM) is a multivariate technique that seeks to explain the relationship among multiple variables. In the present study, the relationship between Country of Origin image, intention to Purchase, Perceived Quality and Brand loyalty have been assessed by using the structural equation modeling (SEM) through AMOS 15. The results are discussed as under:

Relationship between Country of Origin Image, Perceived Quality and Brand loyalty

The relationship between Country of Origin image, Perceived Quality and Brand loyalty was explored with the help of modeling technique of SEM. The result revealed significant and positive effect of Country of Origin image on Perceived Quality and Brand loyalty (SRW= 0.502, CR=5.39, sig. < .001). Further the model fit indices are also very good ($\chi^2/df=3.878$, GFI=0.982, CFI= 0.901, RMR= 0.033, RMSEA .081, AGFI= 0.872). Thus, our first hypotheses, that is, Country of Origin image has a significant impact on Perceived Quality and second hypothesis, that is Perceived Quality has a significant impact on Brand loyalty stands accepted.

Discussions, Conclusion and Strategic Implications

The data analysis suggests that the customers perceive Chinese mobiles mainly on two dimensions "value for money" and "availability". This has been validated by results of the factor analysis which has reduced the scale into two dimensions.

These two dimensions suggest that the best possible strategy of penetration has been followed by Chinese mobile manufacturers as they focus on the availability of product in Indian market at a comparatively low price. Chinese producers of mobile phones are stressing on advertising their models properly in order to make the respondents aware of the latest models and also helping the customers to make distinction between Chinese mobiles and other brands of mobiles. Respondents are also of the opinion that mobiles made in China are good in looks, therefore, the manufacturers of Chinese mobiles should concentrate on coming up with more and more models with suitable looks in order to catch the attention of the buyers. Chinese mobile producers should not confine themselves in producing a mobile which is cheap but should also cater to the needs of customers who wish to buy a costly mobile highlighting status symbol and a luxurious item to buy.

The Chinese producers should come up with models which are known for their consistency and dependability as done by branded companies such as Nokia, Samsung, Sony Ericsson and Blackberry.

However, as per the data analysis many respondents view that mobiles made in china do not have high technology, are difficult to service and also the life of Chinese mobiles is short as compared to mobiles made in other countries. Therefore the companies of Chinese origin dealing in mobiles should stress more on improving the quality of Chinese mobiles which will help them to retain and attract more and more customers and also should set up their 24/7 customer care and service centers across India in order to provide a good service to the customers.

Further, it has been indicated that Chinese mobiles have a huge market as they are sold in many countries, are easily available and also come up with a wide range of models. Therefore, while catering to the needs of such a huge Indian segment, which is so diversified, Chinese companies should make a niche market keeping in mind the demographics of customers in order to capture the loyalty of Indian customers. Chinese producers of mobile should come up with models which can provide a sense of superiority to the customers. Thus, resulting in making customers more brand loyal.

However, most of the respondents are of the opinion that mobiles made in China need repairs frequently due to cheap quality, therefore as stated above companies should stress on producing quality products which would last a long time and provide good after sales services. By doing so, the companies dealing in Chinese mobiles can give a tough competition to other famous brand such as Nokia, Sony Ericsson, Samsung etc.

The findings of the study show that Country of Origin image has a positive and significant influence on value, usage, class, superiority and service quality. It is actually the image of the country which creates value of products in the minds of customers. There is a great need to enhance the level of performance and service quality for increase in sales of the products.

Table 1: Reliability and Validity

Components	Std alpha	Alpha I	Alpha II
Country of origin image (China)	0.860	0.871	0.867

Table 1.1 Kaiser- Meyer –Olkin Measures of Sampling for measuring brand loyalty

Adequacy		.872
Bartlett's Test of Sphericity	Approx. Chi-Square	3749.702
	Df	10
	Sig.	0.000

Table 1.2 Kaiser- Meyer –Olkin Measures of Sampling for measuring perceived quality

Adequacy		.881
Bartlett's Test of Sphericity	Approx. Chi-Square	3493.712
	Df	28
	Sig.	.000

Table 2: DEMOGRAPHIC PROFILE OF THE RESPONDENTS**N=1203**

S.No.	VARIABLE	Number of Respondents	% age
1.	GENDER		
	Male	721	59.8
	Female	482	39.9
2.	AGE		
	20-25	789	65.4
	26-35	260	21.6
	36-45	117	9.7
	46 & Above	37	3.1
3.	LOCATION		
	Jammu	407	33.7
	Delhi	422	35.0
	Chandigarh	374	31.0
4.	HOUSEHOLD INCOME		
	10000-20000	422	35.0

Modeling the Effects of Country of Origin Image on Quality Perceptions and Brand Loyalty:
A Study of Chinese Mobile

Table 3: Summary of results of scale purification for Country of Origin Image - Mean, factor loading, Variance explained, KMO value, Eigen value, and Communalities .(China)								
Dimensions	Factor	Mean	S.D	F.L	Com	KMO	E.V	V.E
Value	Value for Money (F1)	4.4021	2.0675			0.940	6.280	34.890
	Long Life	3.9227	2.2222	0.801	0.726			
	Consistent	4.1779	1.8527	0.693	0.625			
	Dependable	4.0756	2.1791	0.766	0.686			
	Expensive	4.3433	2.1709	0.811	0.695			
	Luxury Product	4.4630	2.0580	0.754	0.669			
	Looks	4.5644	2.0553	0.713	0.652			
	Advertisements	4.5985	2.1801	0.761	0.643			
	Difficult to service	4.6858	1.8770	0.577	0.559			
	High technology	4.5993	1.9956	0.570	0.540			
	Good value	4.5245	2.0099	0.748	0.622			
	Prestigious	4.4389	2.0293	0.581	0.511			
	Informative ads	4.4314	2.1828	0.552	0.542			
Usage	Availability (F2)	4.8426	1.6635				3.952	56.843
	Sense of superiority	4.8454	2.009	0.609	0.560			
	Sold in many countries	5.1978	1.9247	0.637	0.514			
	Need Repairs	4.8529	1.8681	0.656	0.574			
	Wide range of models	4.7473	1.8258	0.710	0.569			
	Easily available	4.8155	2.1801	0.658	0.572			
	Cheaply put together	4.5968	2.1828	0.710	0.571			

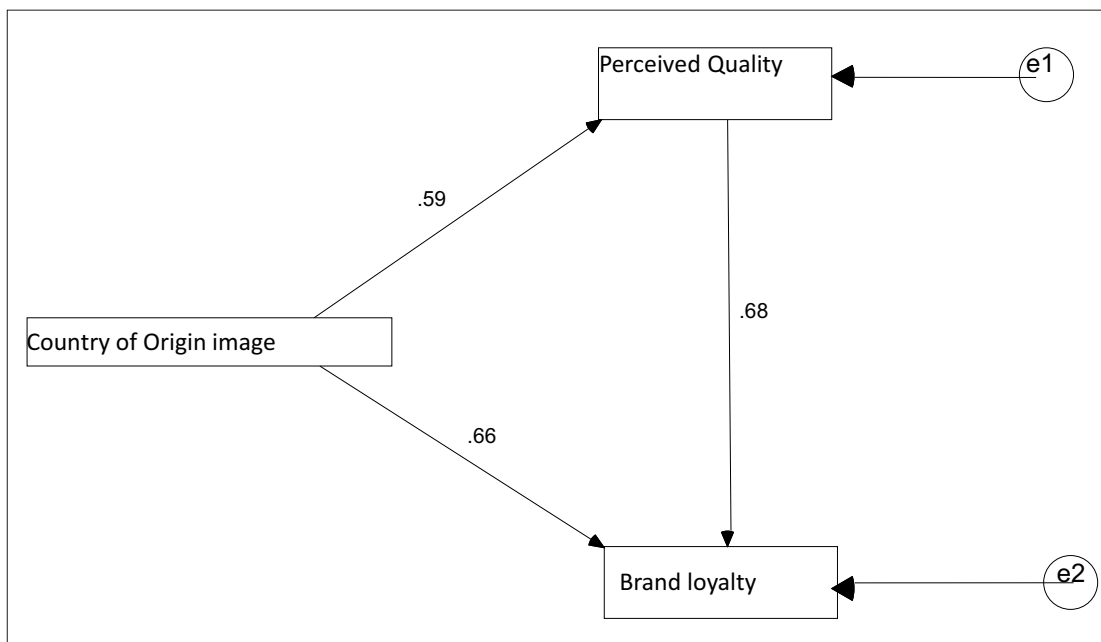
Table 4 Correlation matrix of Country of Origin Image, Perceived Quality and Brand Loyalty for China				
		Country of origin image (China) COIC	Perceived Quality (China) PQC	Brand Loyalty (China) BLC
COIC	Pearson Correlation Sig.(2-tailed) N	1	.828**	.854**
PQC	Pearson Correlation Sig.(2-tailed) N	.828**	1	.853**
BLC	Pearson Correlation Sig.(2-tailed) N	.854**	.853**	1

Table 5 Impact of Country of Origin image on Perceived Quality

Model Summary of Regression Analysis										
<i>Dependent Variable</i>	<i>Independent Variable</i>	<i>R</i>	<i>Adjusted R²</i>	<i>Std. error</i>	<i>Constant</i>	<i>Std.Coeff. Beta</i>	<i>t</i>	<i>Sig.</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>Sig.</i>
Perceived Quality	Country of origin image	.699	.489	.9823	1.463	.699	33.891	.000	1148.58	.000

Table 6 Impact of Perceived Quality Brand Loyalty

Model Summary of Regression Analysis										
<i>Dependent Variable</i>	<i>Independent Variable</i>	<i>R</i>	<i>Adjusted R²</i>	<i>Std. error</i>	<i>Constant</i>	<i>Std.Coeff. Beta</i>	<i>T</i>	<i>Sig.</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>Sig.</i>
Brand Loyalty	Perceived Quality	.739	.547	1.262	.551	.739	38.045	.000	1447.45	.000

Table 7 Structural Equation Modeling to test the Impact of Country of Origin image on Perceived Quality and Brand loyalty

References

- Aaker, D. A. (1996), Measuring brand equity across products and markets, *California Management Review*, Vol. 38 (3), pp. 102-20.
- Agarwal, S. and S. Sikri (1996), Country Image: Consumer evaluation of product country extensions, *International Marketing Review*, Vol. 13 (4), pp.23-39.
- Ahmed, S.A., and A. d'Astou (1995), Cross national evaluation of made in concept using multiple cues, *European Journal of Marketing*, Vol. 27(7), pp.39-52.
- Al-Sulaiti, K. and M.J. Baker (1998), Country of origin effects: A literature review, *Marketing*
- Baker, M.J. and J. Michie (1995), Product country images: Perceptions of Asian cars, Department of Marketing, University of Strathclyde, Working Paper Series No. 95/3.
- Baughn, C, and A Yaprak (1991), Mapping country-of-origin research: Recent developments and emerging avenues, *Product-Country Images: Impact and Role in International Marketing*, International Business Press, New York, NY.
- Baughn, C. C. and A. Yaprak (1993), Economic nationalism: Conceptual and empirical development, *Political Psychology*, Vol. 17(4), pp.759-778.
- Beatty, Sharon E., Lynn R. Kahle, and P. Homer, (1988), The Involvement-Commitment Model: Theory and Implications, *Journal of Business Research*, Vol.16(2), pp 149-167.
- Bilkey, W. and E. Nes (1982), Country of Origin effects on product evaluations, *Journal of International Business Studies*, Vol. 13(1), pp.89-99.
- Chao, P. (1993), Partitioning country of origin effects: Consumer evaluations, *Journal of International Business Studies*, Vol. 24 (2), pp.291-306.
- Chowdhury, M. Humayun Kabir and Syed S. Andaleeb, (2007), A Multivariate Model of Perceived Quality in a Developing Country, *Journal of International Consumer Marketing*, Vol. 19 (4), pp. 33-57.
- Dickerson, K. (1982), Imported versus US-produced apparel: Consumers' view and buying patterns, *Home Economics Research Journal*, Vol. 10(1), pp.241-252.
- Han, C.M. and Terpestra, V. (1998), Country of Origin Effects for Uni-national and Bi-national Products, *Journal of International Business Studies*, pp. 235-255.
- Heslop, L. and C. Papadopoulos (1993), Measuring the joint effect of brand and country image in consumer evaluation of global products, *Journal of Marketing Practice*, Vol. 3 (3), pp.190-207.
- Jimenez, N. H. and S. S. Martin (2006), The role of country-of-origin, ethnocentrism and animosity in promoting consumer trust: The moderating role of familiarity, *International Business Review*, Vol. 19(1), pp.34-45.

- Kan, W. H. (2002), The Study of Relation between Product Value, Brand Trust, Brand Affect and Brand Loyalty, Unpublished master thesis, Tamkang University, Taiwan.
- Kaynak, E. and S. Cavusgil (1983), Consumer attitudes towards products of foreign origin: Do they vary across product classes, *International Journal of Advertising*, Vol. 2(2), pp.147-157.
- Kenny Lim, (2001), Consumer brand classifications: an assessment of culture-of-origin versus country-of-origin, *Journal of Product and Brand Management*, Vol. 10 (2), pp.120-136.
- Kim, R. B., & Chao, Y. (2018). The effect of country of origin on consumer based brand equity (CBBE) of Colombian consumers: An empirical investigation of Samsung vs. Huawei brands. *Journal of International Studies*, 11(3), 70-81.
- Kinra, N., (2006), The effect of country of origin on foreign brand names in the Indian Market, *Marketing Intelligence and Planning*, Vol. 24(1), pp.15-30.
- Knight, G. A. (2000), A flexible model of consumer country-of-origin perceptions, *International Marketing Review*, Vol. 17(2), pp.127-145.
- Li, W. K. and R. S. Wyer (1994), The role of country of origin in product evaluations: Informational and standard-of-comparison effects, *Journal of Consumer Psychology*, Vol. 3 (2), pp.187-212.
- Lin, L.Y and C.S. Chen (2006), The influence of country of origin image, product knowledge and product involvement on consumer purchase decisions: An empirical study of insurance and catering services in Taiwan, *Journal of Consumer Marketing*, Vol. 23(5), pp. 248-265.
- Lin, S. L. (2005), A study of the influence on repurchase intention of customer satisfaction and brand loyalty: In the case of automobile selling business, Unpublished master thesis, Chung Yuan Christian University, Taiwan.
- Morganosky, M.A. and M.M. Lazarde (1987), Foreign-made apparel: Influences on consumers perceptions of brand and store quality, *International Journal of Advertising*, Vol. 6, pp.339-346.
- Parameswaran, R. and R.M. Pisharodi (1994), Facets of Country of Origin Image: An Empirical Assessment, *Journal of Advertising*, Vol. 23(1), pp.43-56.
- Paswan, A.K. and D. Sharma, (2004), Brand country of origin (COO) knowledge and coo image: Investigation in an emerging franchise market, *Journal of Product and Brand Management*, 13(3), pp. 144-55.
- Samiee, S. (1994), Customer evaluation of products in a global market, *Journal of International Business Studies*, Vol. 25, pp.579-604.

Modeling the Effects of Country of Origin Image on Quality Perceptions and Brand Loyalty:
A Study of Chinese Mobile

- Schooler, R. (1965), Product bias in the Central American common market, *Journal of Marketing Research*, Vol. 2, pp.394-97.
- Wang C. and C. Lamb (1983), The impact of selected environmental forces upon consumers' willingness to buy foreign products, *Journal of the Academy of Marketing Science*, Vol.11(2), pp.71-84.
- Xiaoling Hu , Low Sui Pheng, Liu Jun Ying, Soh Shan Shan, (2008), Chinese foreign workers in Singapore's construction industry, *Journal of Technology Management in China*, Vol. 3 (2), pp.211-223.
- Xuehua Wang, Zhilin Yang, (2008), Does country-of-origin matter in the relationship between brand personality and purchase intention in emerging economies? Evidence from China's auto industry, *International Marketing Review*, Vol. 25(4), pp.458-474.
- Yamen Koubaa, (2008), Country of origin, brand image perception, and brand image structure, *Asia Pacific Journal of Marketing and Logistics*, Vol. 20 (2), pp.139-155.
- Zeithaml, V. A. (1988), Consumer perception of price, quality and value: A means-end model and synthesis of evidence, *Journal of Marketing*, Vol. 52(3), pp.12-22.
- Zhongqi Jin and Bal Chansarkar, N.M. Kondap, (2006), Brand origin in an emerging market: Perceptions of Indian consumers, *Asia Pacific Journal of Marketing and Logistics*, Vol. 18 (4), pp.283-302.

Understanding Students' Acceptance of e-Learning Systems: Using Technology Acceptance Model

Asif Ali* and Rabinder Singh**

ABSTRACT

The rapid development of Information and Communication Technology (ICT) has revolutionised the world we live in. The increasing penetration of ICT has led to a new paradigm of education and learning called e-Learning, being ubiquitous it has cut across barriers of time and space to learning. Although e-Learning is in its infancy stages in India but most of the universities in India have started e-learning (MOOCs Massive Open Online Courses) as tool to disseminate knowledge. By virtue of wide recognition of e-learning this study examines factors that affect student's decision towards using e-Learning as a medium of education. Using Technology Acceptance Model (TAM) as theoretical framework, a questionnaire was administered to 315 students. Data about four constructs was collected hypothesized to describe student's acceptance of e-Learning. The constructs namely perceived usefulness, perceived ease of use, attitude toward usage and behavioural intention to use have been adopted from TAM (Davis, F. D. (1985). Data collected was analysed using structural equation modelling (Amos 20). The results showed that Perceived usefulness and Perceived ease of use significantly influenced attitude toward e-Learning and intention to use.

Keywords: Technology Acceptance Model, e-Learning, Higher Education.

Introduction

The rapid development of Information and Communication Technology (ICT) has revolutionised the world we live in and education being no exception. Technology has changed the dynamics of traditional classroom teaching. The increasing penetration of ICT has led to a new paradigm of education and learning called e-Learning which is ubiquitous as it cuts across barriers of time and space to learning. The infusion of technology has led to e-learning platforms becoming more popular these days. The aim of e-learning is to supplement traditional teaching and not to replace it and provide an alternative channel to learning which is ubiquitous and cost efficient (Pelliccione, 2001; Adomi, E. E., & Kpangban, E. (2010). The traditional methods used in classroom teaching in colleges and universities have been supplemented with technology enabled education. Although e-Learning is in its infancy stages in India but most of the universities in India have started e-learning (MOOCs Massive Open Online Courses) as tool to disseminate knowledge. Under MOOC model courses on various disciplines are offered by the universities, wherein a student can get enrolled and access the video lectures, tutorials and assignments. Once the student has learned a particular

* Assistant Professor, Department of HRM & OB, Central University of Jammu, Samba, Jammu, India

** Assistant Professor, Department of Tourism and Travel Management, Central University of Jammu, Samba, Jammu, India.

course they are assessed thereafter through online tests and certificates are awarded after successful completion of the course. Universities around the globe are using e-learning or distance platforms in addition to regular classroom teaching to support their fulltime on-campus students. Universities have adopted e-learning as an integral part of their teaching pedagogy. There are different e-learning options which institutions are offering, some institutions are using web course tools (WebCT) to enhance their learning systems. WebCT is an e-learning platform developed for higher education. Some of the pedagogical tools available for higher education on this platform are Web Course Tools, Web course Homepage System (WebCH), Blackboard learning system and System for Multimedia Integrated Learning (SMILE). The web based learning system has been widely accepted in higher education around the globe. More than 2000 higher education institutions are using WebCT to provide learning tools such as course content management, chat rooms and discussion boards. E-learning has tremendous potential which is evident from the fact it is getting significant attention from higher education institutions and software developers at large.

Theoretical Framework

E-learning can be defined in many ways. (Jenkins & Hanson, 2003) defines e-learning as learning facilitated and supported through utilization of information and communication technology (ICT). The cost benefits associated with e-learning platforms have given them wide acceptance. Other benefits associated are easy and flexible access, timely content availability, consistency and convenience (Cantoni, Cellario, &Porta, 2004; Kelly & Bauer, 2004). Many online platforms like Course Era have emerged recently which provide e-learning in collaboration with different universities globally to provide a bouquet of certification courses. These platforms have overcome time and space barriers to provide learner centric education approach and at same time being cost efficient (Pelliccione, 2001; Adomi, E. E., &Kpangban, E., 2010). While e-learning has offered many advantages it has certain limitations as well. High pedagogical skills, learner's self-discipline and motivation (Cantoni et al.,2004) to name a few. Security issues such as cyber-attacks and hacking in learning platforms is also an area of concern. (Ramim& Levy, 2006). One of the major challenges in administering the online test is to authenticate the test taker as direct monitoring is not possible during online examinations. A combination of online and offline tests are being offered by the institutions to enhance the assessment of learning performance.

The ICT led education model came into vogue during mid-1990's. Many researches since then have been undertaken to study learners acceptance to e-learning using technology acceptance model (TAM) however no such study has been reported in India. TAM is an intention-to-use based model developed to specifically predict or explain acceptance of technology by users. Technology acceptance model (Davis, Bagozzi&Warshaw, 1989; Davis, 1989) is widely researched and recognised model to explain technology adoption in any area. TAM in-turn is grounded on theory of reasoned action (Fishbein&Ajzen, 1975) which states individual's behaviour and intention to behave in a particular way is a function of attitude and subjective norms towards that particular behaviour.

By virtue of wide recognition of e-learning and the research gap identified above this study examines student's adoption of e-Learning platforms as a learning medium.

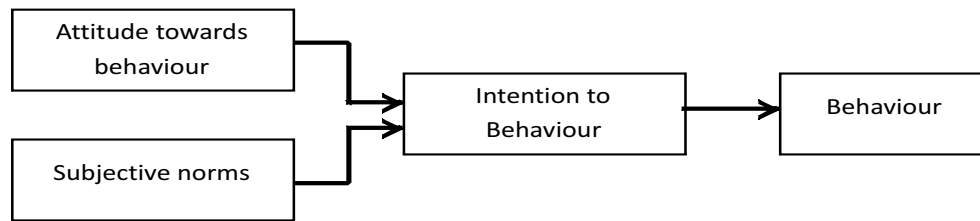


Figure 1 Theory of Reasoned Action

Research Model and Hypotheses

From application software adoption like spread-sheet applications (Mathieson, 1991), to e-learning (Roca et al., 2006), TAM has been widely used to study acceptance of users to technology. Various studies have also accentuated the fact that besides various constructs in generic TAM there are few external factors that influence users acceptance of technology indirectly through perceived ease of use and perceived usefulness. Such external factors can be categorised under Individual, Social and Organizational factors. Among these one such factor is technical support which is defined as “assistance one can get to easily use computer hardware and software products” (Ralph, 1991). Including technology support as an external variable the extended TAM used in this study is shown in Figure 2 which includes Technical Support, Perceived ease of use, Perceived usefulness, Attitude toward use, Intention to use and System use.

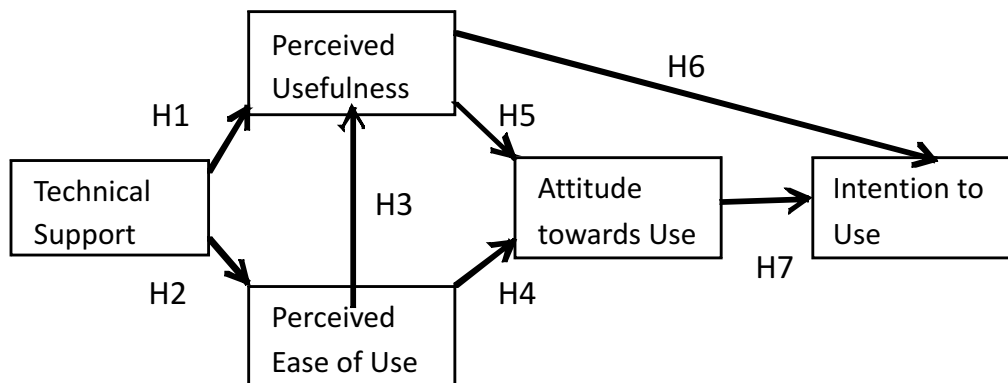


Figure 2 Research Model (Technology acceptance model for e-learning)

Ralph (1991) defined technical support as “assistance one can get to easily use computer hardware and software products”. Technical support as external variable is important factor for adoption of technology in e-learning (Williams, 2002; Chung, N., & Kwon, S. J., 2009; Sánchez, R. A., & Hueros, A. D., 2010). Thus we hypothesize that:

H1: Technical Support positively effects Perceived usefulness

H2: Technical Support positively effects Perceived ease of use

In context of this study the Perceived ease of use e-learning systems is defined as the degree to which users consider using e-learning systems effortless. It has also been empirically verified Perceived ease of use has strong influence on Perceived usefulness (Saade, R., & Bahli, B., 2005; Adams, D. A., Nelson, R. R., & Todd, P. A., 1992; Moon, J. W., & Kim, Y. G., 2001). In similar context Perceived usefulness of e-learning is defined as degree to users consider using e-learning systems will improve learning performance. Both these factors together have an effect on one's attitude towards technology (e-learning). Attitudes are evaluative statements that one has about everything. In context of this study attitude towards use is defined as positive evaluation of user to use e-learning which in-turn has direct impact on intention to use e-learning for now and future continuance. The perceived usefulness also influences users intention to use e-learning systems (Davis, 1989; Davis et al., 1989). The intention to use directly effects system use which refers to actual usage of e-learning systems. With above discussion as premise we hypothesize that:

H3: Perceived ease of use positively effects perceived usefulness

H4: Perceived ease of use positively effects Attitude towards use

H5: Perceived usefulness effects Attitude towards use positively

H6: Perceived usefulness effects Intention to use positively

H7: Attitude towards use positively influences Intention to use

Research Methods

Instrument Development

For measuring various constructs of hypothesized model an instrument was developed using various researches in field of Information system and technology adoption (TAM). A questionnaire consisting of 19 items under 5 constructs along with their references are presented in table 1. Each measurement item on instrument was measured on seven point Likert scale with (1) representing “very strongly disagree” (3) representing “neutral” (7) “very strongly agree”.

The questionnaire was presented to two professors with expertise in technology adoption for feedback and expert comments. Any changes desired were done as per feedback of experts. A pilot study was conducted by administering questionnaire to 50 Post Graduate students all of whom had used e-learning systems previously. The final questionnaire with 5 constructs and 19 items is presented in table 1.

Table 1 Measurement Instrument

Construct	Item	Wording	Reference
Technical Support(TS)	TS1	A helpline is available when there is technical problem	Igbaria (1990)
	TS2	Web based support available for technical problems	
	TS3	E-mail support to resolve technical problems	
	TS4	Trouble shooting wizard is available for technical	
Perceived ease of	PE1	Learning to operate an e-learning system is easy for me	Davis (1993)
	PE2	It's easy for me to gain skill to operate e-learning	
	PE3	I found e0learning easy to use	
	PE4	Overall e-learning is easy to use	
Perceived usefulness(PU)	PU1	E-learning could improves my academic performance	Davis (1993)
	PU2	E-learning enhances effectiveness of my learning	
	PU3	E-learning in curriculum makes learning efficient	
	PU4	e-learning enables me to learn at my own pace	
Attitude towards	AU1	Learning using e-learning is good idea	Ajzen&Fishbein (1980)
	AU2	E-learning is easy and fun	
	AU3	I like using e-learning for learning	
	AU4	Overall I have favorable attitude towards e-learning	
Intention to Use(IU)	IU1	I intend to use e-learning in my course	Ajzen&Fishbein (1980)
	IU2	I will often use e-learning	
	IU3	I intend to increase use of e-learning in future	

Data Collection

For data collection an online survey was conducted among the students of four Universities in North India. Data was collected online using Google forms by sending out email links to the survey. A total of 300 links were sent out and 225 responses were recorded out of which 20 responses were eliminated due to incomplete data. Complete data set of 205 students (response rate = 68.33%) was put to analysis. KMO and Bartlett's Test were used to test sample adequacy with both being significant ($p < 0.001$) and KMO value more than threshold(0.83).

Out of 205 respondents 98 were males and 107 females with average age of 21.5 years with most of them being post-graduate students. The respondents were from Arts, Science and Engineering background mostly. The demographics of respondents are presented in Table 2.

Table 2 Demographics of respondents

Category		Frequency	%age
Gender	Male	98	47.8
	Female	107	52.2
	Total	205	100
Education	UnderGrad	30	14.6
	PosGrad	150	73.17
	Doctoral	20	9.75
	Others	5	2.43
	Total	205	100
Age	<=20	30	14.63
	21-25	160	78.04
	26-30	10	4.8
	>30	5	2.43
	Total	205	100
Course	Arts	65	31.7
	Science	70	34.14
	Engineering	50	24.39
	Others	20	9.75
	Total	205	100

Data Analysis and Results

Factor Analysis (EFA and CFA)

For instrument development using theory-driven approach the data collected was analysed using SPSS 20. Scale Validation was done in two steps. In first step exploratory factor analysis was done in which data was put to PCA with Varimax rotation. Factor loadings greater than +- 0.5 and Eigen values 1 were extracted (Hair, Anderson, Tatham, & Black, 1998). Five stable constructs emerged with minimal cross loadings and together explaining 68.7% of variance explained in table 3.

In second step data was subjected to confirmatory factor analysis using Amos 20 and data depicted suitable model fit. The measures of model fit were: normed-fit-index = 0.916, goodness-of-fit index (GFI) = 0.895, comparative fit index (CFI) = 0.946, adjusted goodness-of-fit index (AGFI) = 0.883 and root mean square of approximation (RMSEA) = 0.059.

Table 3 Factor Analysis

	Component				
	1	2	3	4	5
TS1					.725
TS2					.712
TS3					.623
TS4					.724
PE1	.710				
PE2	.728				
PE3	.756				
PE4	.828				
PU1		.723			
PU2		.653			
PU3		.723			
PU4		.852			
AU1			.665		
AU2			.722		
AU3			.738		
AU4			.802		
IU1				.762	
IU2				.742	
IU3				.786	
Eigen Value	>1	>1	>1	>1	>1
Cumulative Variance(%)			68.7%		

Reliability and Validity

Cronbach's Alpha coefficient was used to test the internal consistency / reliability of data. Cronbach's Alpha coefficient greater than 0.7 indicates high reliability of data however coefficient less than 0.35 indicates a poor reliability (Cronbach, 1951; Nunnally, 1978). In all the cases (constructs) the Cronbach's Alpha coefficient was well above threshold value of 0.7 thereby suggesting high reliability.

Construct validity refers to degree to which two constructs are distinct. As in factor analysis using PCA with varimax rotation five stable constructs emerged with all having factor loadings on respective construct more than 0.6 it establishes the constructs convergent validity (Hair, Anderson, Tatham, & Black, 1998). The discriminant validity was verified by checking correlation among various constructs. In none of the cases correlation among constructs was reported above 0.85 thereby suggesting adequate discriminant validity.

Structural Model and Hypotheses Testing

The research model was tested for hypothesized causal relationships between various constructs. No significant correlation or differences was found between respondents groups on basis of level of education, age and gender with dependent variables namely Intention to use and system use. As such demographic variables were dropped for further analysis. With sample size greater than 200 Structural Model Equation (SEM) was preferred over traditional regression model for testing proposed hypotheses (Loehlin, 1992). For model estimation SEM (Amos 20) was used with maximum likelihood method. The Figure 3 represents structural model results and various model indices were CFI = 0.962, NFI = 0.954, GFI = 0.952, AGFI = 0.936, RMSEA = 0.059, RMR = 0.037. As the good fitness indices are there in model all above 0.9 (Bentler, P. M., & Bonett, D. G., 1980). thus the path coefficients (standardized) can be used to test hypotheses.

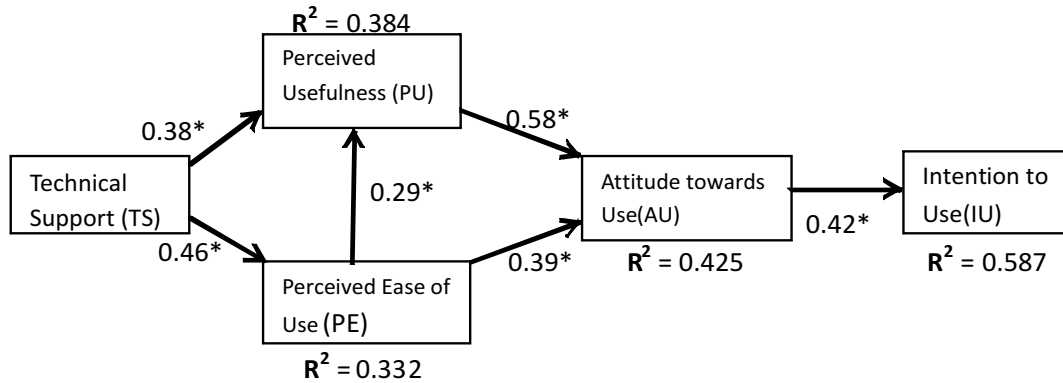


Figure 3 Structural model testing results (* p < 0.001)

In hypotheses testing following relationships were found significant among various constructs. Technical support was found significantly affecting Perceived usefulness (H1) and Perceived ease of use (H2). Technical support explained 33.2 % variation in Perceived ease of use. Perceived ease of use was found to have significant effect on Perceived usefulness (H3). Technical support and Perceived usefulness together explained 38.4% variation in perceived usefulness. Perceived ease of use and Perceived usefulness had significant effect on Attitude towards use (H4 & H5) and together they explained 42.5% variation in Attitude towards use. Perceived usefulness did not have any significant effect on intention (H6) to use thus was rejected ($p > 0.05$). Attitude towards use had significant effect on intention to use (H7) and explained 58.7% variation in intention to use. The hypotheses results are enumerated in table 4.

Table 4 Hypotheses results

Relationship	Hypotheses	Results
TS -----PU	Technical Support is positively associated with Perceived usefulness	H1 : Supported
TS -----PE	Technical Support is positively associated with Perceived ease of use	H2 : Supported
PE -----PU	Perceived ease of use is positively associated with Perceived usefulness	H3 : Supported
PE -----AU	Perceived ease of use is positively associated with Attitude towards use	H4 : Supported
PU -----AU	Perceived usefulness is positively associated with Attitude towards use	H5 : Supported
PU -----IU	Perceived usefulness is positively associated with Intention to use	H6 : Not-Supported
AU -----IU	Attitude towards use is positively associated with Intention to use	H7 : Supported

Discussion and Implications

In contemporary time it has become vital for educationists to impart learning through electronic media(e-learning) as it cuts across the time and space barriers. This study tries to examine factors that students put to evaluation while they decide whether to use e-learning systems for acquiring knowledge or not. All the hypotheses proposed in study are verified to be true with exception of one (PU IU). Whether a student will develop positive attitude towards e-learning and thereby actually start using e-learning systems has been observed to be dependent on how easy to use and useful student thinks an e-learning system. These factors besides other factors are dependent on how readily technical support for e-learning system is available. The results of this study are coherent with various other studies conducted on adoption of e-learning using TAM.

Previous studies have shown less consideration to external variables in TAM for e-learning adoption. This study makes Technical Support as one of the external variable to better understand adoption of e-learning. To knowledge disseminating institutes particularly college and universities the e-learning content that is made available online for knowledge dissemination or acquisition, efforts should be made to provide technical support wherever possible which should be in form of Live chats, calling , hotlines ,trouble shooting, videos demonstration etc.

Limitations and Future Research

The limitations of the study include data which was collected from students of four north Indian universities leaving aside huge number of students in other universities. Also majority of respondents were students pursuing degree courses only and in age band of 20-25 years. Thus the generalization of facts ought to be done with care.

While this study highlights the intrinsic technical aspects of the e-learning system (an external variable), studies can also be conducted to understand impact of various other external variable, (institutional, social & individual) that can significantly affect adoption of e-learning systems.

References

- Adams, D. A., Nelson, R. R., & Todd, P. A. (1992). Perceived usefulness, ease of use, and usage of information technology: A replication. *MIS quarterly*, 227-247.
- Adomi, E. E., & Kpangban, E. (2010). Application of ICTs in Nigerian secondary schools. *Library Philosophy and Practice (e-journal)*, 345.
- Ajzen, I., & Fishbein, M. (1980). Understanding attitudes and predicting social behaviour.
- Bentler, P. M., & Bonett, D. G. (1980). Significance tests and goodness of fit in the analysis of covariance structures. *Psychological bulletin*, 88(3), 588.
- Cantoni, V., Cellario, M., & Porta, M. (2004). Perspectives and challenges in e-learning: towards natural interaction paradigms. *Journal of Visual Languages & Computing*, 15(5), 333-345.

Understanding Students Acceptance of e-Learning Systems: Using Technology Acceptance Model

- Chung, N., & Kwon, S. J. (2009). The effects of customers' mobile experience and technical support on the intention to use mobile banking. *Cyberpsychology & Behavior*, 12(5), 539-543.
- Cuiford, J. P. (1965). *Fundamental Statistics in Psychology and Education*, 4th (Ed), NY McGraw Hill.
- Day, RL (1977).
- Davis, F. D. (1989). Perceived usefulness, perceived ease of use, and user acceptance of information technology. *MIS quarterly*, 319-340.
- Davis, F. D. (1993). User acceptance of information technology: system characteristics, user perceptions and behavioral impacts. *International journal of man-machine studies*, 38(3), 475-487.
- Davis, F. D., Bagozzi, R. P., & Warshaw, P. R. (1989). User acceptance of computer technology: a comparison of two theoretical models. *Management science*, 35(8), 982-1003.
- Fishbein, M., & Ajzen, I. (1975). *Belief, attitude, intention and behavior: An introduction to theory and research*.
- Hair, J. F., Black, W. C., Babin, B. J., Anderson, R. E., & Tatham, R. L. (1998). *Multivariate data analysis* (Vol. 5, No. 3, pp. 207-219). Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice hall.
- Igbaria, M. (1990). End-user computing effectiveness: A structural equation model. *Omega*, 18(6), 637-652.
- Jenkins, M., & Hanson, J. (2003). *E-learning series No. 1: A guide for senior managers* (Vol. 1). Learning and Teaching Support Network Generic Centre.
- Kelly, T. & Bauer, D. (2004) Managing intellectual capital via e-learning at Cisco. In: *Handbook on Knowledge Management 2: Knowledge Directions*, Holsapple, C. (ed.), pp. 511-532. Springer, Berlin, Germany.
- Loehlin, J. C. (1998). *Latent variable models: An introduction to factor, path, and structural analysis*. Lawrence Erlbaum Associates Publishers.
- Mathieson, K. (1991). Predicting user intentions: comparing the technology acceptance model with the theory of planned behavior. *Information systems research*, 2(3), 173-191.
- Moon, J. W., & Kim, Y. G. (2001). Extending the TAM for a World-Wide-Web context. *Information & management*, 38(4), 217-230.
- Nunnally, J. C., & Bernstein, I. H. (1978). *Psychometric theory*.
- Pelliccione, L. (2001). *Implementing innovative technology: Towards the transformation of a university* (Doctoral dissertation, Curtin University).

- Ralph, W. (1991). Help! The art of computer technical support.
- Ramim, M., & Levy, Y. (2006). Securing e-learning systems: A case of insider cyber attacks and novice IT management in a small university. *Journal of Cases on Information Technology (JCIT)*, 8(4), 24-34.
- Roca, J. C., Chiu, C. M., & Martínez, F. J. (2006). Understanding e-learning continuance intention: An extension of the Technology Acceptance Model. *International Journal of human-computer studies*, 64(8), 683-696.
- Saadé, R., & Bahli, B. (2005). The impact of cognitive absorption on perceived usefulness and perceived ease of use in on-line learning: an extension of the technology acceptance model. *Information & management*, 42(2), 317-327.
- Sánchez, R. A., & Hueros, A. D. (2010). Motivational factors that influence the acceptance of Moodle using TAM. *Computers in human behavior*, 26(6), 1632-1640.
- Williams, C. (2002). Learning on-line: A review of recent literature in a rapidly expanding field. *Journal of further and Higher Education*, 26(3), 263-272.

Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir

Ruqia Ayoub* and Abdul Gani**

ABSTRACT

Despite the proliferation of leadership research in the past 75 years, investigating the ways in which female and male leaders enact and experience leadership continues to surface unanswered questions. The present study, conducted with special reference to higher education institutions in Jammu & Kashmir, made an attempt to fill up this gap in the existing research. The study compares different leadership styles across gender. The study also identifies the gender differences in leadership styles as perceived by the leaders and their subordinates. It contributes to useful knowledge for improving the leadership effectiveness of male and female leaders in the higher education sector of Jammu and Kashmir State. The findings of the study can be replicated in other organizations. The study has implications for practitioners and academicians.

Keywords: Leadership, Women Leaders, Leadership Styles, Higher Education

Introduction

Leadership has been extensively researched for hundreds of years by political scientists, psychologists, historians, behavioural scientists and practitioners from various fields. Especially in corporate sector, leadership has increasingly become a major research focus. Most of the research in the area of leadership has been conducted in North American and European countries with quite limited interest in other cultures and countries including India (Dastmalchian et al., 2001). The subject has been studied by various people who have not been able to frame a single universal definition of leadership due to its controversial nature. Research reveals that a leader has to perform several roles which make leadership subject a complex one and there are as many definitions of the leadership as there are leaders in this universe. Yukul (2010) has summarized leadership as a process of using influence and motivation to encourage participation in achieving group or organizational success. A leader should possess certain desirable characteristics, and then develop the relationship with followers (Graen & Uhl-Bien, 1995). According to Eby and Allen (2012), the relationship between a leader and a follower determines how employees interact and establish a social relationship in the work group.

Gender and its impact on leadership has been a topic of discussion during the past few decades. Voluminous amount of literature is available today on the topic and researchers have come up with a very vast range of findings in the field. Gender differences in leadership styles have been the most

*Research Scholar, Central University of Kashmir, Nowgam, Srinagar, India

**Professor, Central University of Kashmir, Nowgam, Srinagar, India

intensely studied topics in the field of leadership, as more females have started to attain leadership (Moran, 1992; Burke & Karen, 2001). Brandser (1996) explained that while sex refers to biological differences between males and females, gender refers to the culturally created qualities of males and females. With these basic differences between males and females different characteristics are associated with them. Park (1996) makes a clear cut distinction of these characteristics. Being aggressive, logical, assertive, more controlling, opportunistic are the characteristics associated with males and the qualities associated with females are cooperative, warm, more emotional and submissive. Since there exist a variation in the characteristics possessed by men and women, they tend to exhibit different leadership styles. Leadership styles are the social influential process where subordinates take efforts for goal accomplishment voluntarily (Nanjundeswaraswamy & Swamy, 2014; Northouse, 2013). Another perspective of leadership style was put forward by Memon (2014) who views leadership style as a means to direct people, motivate them and implement the various plans as a result of leader's personality and experience. Northouse (2013) argues further by saying that leadership style is a behavioral pattern of a leader to influence his followers. The meta-analysis conducted by Eagly and Johnson (2004) found men adopting task-oriented style of leadership and women found to adopt relationship-oriented style. Eagly and Karau (2002) describe females as communal leaders. Female leaders are viewed to build a caring and nurturing workplace environment that promotes relationship building (Fine, 2009; Heim & Murphy, 2001). In contrast, other scholars have argued that there are no significant gender differences between males and females in their leadership behaviors. According to Shimanoff and Jenkins (1991), there are far more similarities than differences in the leadership behaviors of men and women and they are equally effective.

Most of the leadership studies have been conducted in corporate sector and in government organizations. There are inadequate studies on leadership in higher education due to the unique features of colleges and universities. Birnbuam (1989) stated that it is very difficult to study leadership in higher educational institutions since the goals are unclear, dual control system exists and conflicts arise between administrative authorities. Cohen and March (1947) introduced the term "organized anarchy" to explain the distinctive characteristics of the universities and colleges and also the issues leader has to take into account. For the success of educational institutions, leadership plays a key role (Osseo-Asare et al., 2005). Higher education sector has become more complex due to globalization, technological developments and social changes. Oshagbemi (1997) states that these changes have emerged from rising demand, cultural transformations and diversity in terms of structure and staff and also the diversified missions.

Gender differences in leadership styles and effectiveness has become one of the most studied research topics in the recent years. Whether men and women behave differently in leadership roles is a much debated question. Although there is general agreement among the researchers that women face more barriers to become leaders than men do, there is much less agreement about the behavior of women and men once they attain leadership roles. The view of leadership as a masculine term makes women less likely to be perceived as effective leaders or even to be considered for leadership positions. It has been argued by some researchers that gender does not impact on leadership effectiveness as the women leaders are as effective as men leaders (Yukl, 1999). Some studies even showed that female managers are more transformational than male managers and female managers tend to motivate followers with positive, reward-based incentives while as men offer a larger measure of less effective and more negative threat-based incentives (Eagly & Engen, 2003).

Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir

The present study, conducted with special reference to higher education institutions in Jammu and Kashmir, made an attempt to fill up this gap in the existing research. The study particularly compares different leadership styles across genders. The present study also identifies the gender differences in leadership styles as perceived by the leaders and subordinates. It contributes to useful knowledge for improving the leadership effectiveness of women leaders in the higher education sector of Jammu and Kashmir State as the results have important productivity and welfare implications. This study informs stakeholders on how to create an enabling environment at the policy and practice level, to understand the requisite traits and strategies that have successfully sustained women in leadership positions. The findings of the study can be replicated in other organizations led by men and women leaders.

Theoretical Background and Hypotheses Development

Leadership is not a new concept in the field of social science studies. The study of leadership dates back to 16th century when Plato, Sun Tzu and Machiavelli gave initial insights into the domain of leadership. However, leadership has become the focus of contemporary academic studies in the last 60 years and particularly more so in the last two decades. In recent years, the area of leadership has been widely studied more than any other aspect of human resource management. Leadership has been a topic of scholarly and popular debate since last few decades and still researchers across the globe have not emerged with an agreed-on definition of leadership. Despite the fact that scholars have failed to come up with a single agreed upon definition for leadership, continuous attempts are being made to give a clear understanding of this debatable term. Bass (2008) puts forward that the correct definition of leadership and conceptions depends on the specific aspect of leadership of interest to the individual.

According to Eby and Allen (2012) the relationship between a leader and a follower determines how employees interact and establish a social relationship in the workgroup. It is an act of accountability that takes the responsibility to create change through its vision. The perspective to this leadership definition has been provided by Griffin (2012) who argued that leadership is a process that focuses on shaping or influencing people to obtain organizational goals. Jagd (2010) proposed that leadership is a process involving three elements: influencing others to behave in a certain way; working with people in a group context; and influencing group members in the direction of a goal accomplishment. Memon (2014) viewed leadership as a process by which a leader is able to influence the attitudes, actions, thoughts and behaviour of other individuals.

Gender and Leadership

All communities build social rules according to gender and people are expected to behave as per their gender category. Individual behaviors can be attributed to many factors which shape their personality like ethnicity, cultural background, religion etc., but only two are common to every single human being all over the world: male and female gender. Gender is the most obvious and visible characteristic that distinguishes individuals. Gender and leadership is one of the most important debated questions, the question being, "is leadership really a gendered concept and if it is, then how". There has been a significant development on leadership research wherein researchers have focused on whether gender influences individual's leadership style? Eagly et al. (2003, 2013, and 2016) found that the number of females moving into leadership positions is increasing. With this growing number of

females in top positions in business and management, the differences on the basis of gender and the possible differences in leadership styles and effectiveness have developed into a significant field of study (Hoyt, 2013; Hoyt & Simon, 2016).

Men and women respond to situations differently and this difference in reactions has a bearing on the style they adopt. While males are considered to be expressive in their opinions and usually sound more powerful and confident, women are more inclined to ask questions or express a personal viewpoint and they sound reassuring and placatory (Oakley, 2000). According to Bass and Riggio (2006), women are better emotional communicators and have better interpersonal skills as compared to males. Eagly et al. (2003) support the fact that when it comes to individualized considerations women are far better than men. Women, who are in leadership roles have always struggled, faced the serious challenges. Women have proved their abilities in every sector. Women today lead multinational organizations and are in no way inferior to males.

Effective leadership is required in every organization, be that a private or a public one. The effectiveness of leader's behavior determines how successful an individual's career will be and also the fate of the organizations (Lussier and Achua, 2009). An effective leader provides benefit to his subordinates as well as to the organization. Based on the literature review, following hypotheses has been formulated.

H1: Gender makes no difference in leadership style.

H2: There is no significant difference in the leadership styles as perceived by the leaders themselves, and those perceived by their subordinates.

Research Methodology

For the purpose of this study, the researcher has adopted the exploratory and descriptive research designs. To explore the difference in leadership styles on the basis of gender, an exploratory design was adopted. The present research also focused on investigating whether there is any significant difference in the leadership styles as perceived by the leaders themselves, and those perceived by their subordinates. To achieve this objective, descriptive research design was adopted.

Data Sources and Sample Design

The data was collected from the primary as well as secondary sources. The primary source constituted responses from individual male and female respondents holding leadership positions in higher education institutions of Jammu and Kashmir (Principles, Deans Directors and Head of the departments) and also the individuals working under their supervision (as subordinates). The secondary source of data consisted of various official records of colleges and universities and their data bases. The members of academia holding key positions and their subordinates constitute the unit of analysis. The study employed purposive sampling technique followed by systematic random sampling method to collect the data from the universe. The whole population was divided into three regions namely Jammu, Kashmir and Ladakh. Keeping in view the proper gender proportion out of twenty two districts which comprise these three regions, ten districts were drawn purposively. The final sample from the selected institutes was drawn randomly from the available sampling frame. The selected institutes comprised of 6 multidisciplinary universities namely University of Kashmir,

Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir

University of Jammu, Central University of Kashmir, Central University of Jammu, Islamic University of Science & Technology and Shri Mata Vaishno Devi University and 29 multi-disciplinary government degree colleges of the selected districts.

The sample size for subordinates comprises of 205 respondents keeping in view the population which was 683 (Source: Data provided by Higher education Department, J&K). Only those respondents were considered as subordinates who were working under the selected leaders in the study. The sample size comprises of more than 30% of total population of subordinates. Since the number of female respondents was limited, the equal number of male respondents was drawn from the sample frame. The sample size of female leaders in selected higher education institutions was fifty eight keeping in view the population that was 270 (as per the official record of higher education department). The sample size drawn represents more than 20% of the population. Similarly fifty eight male leaders were chosen randomly to draw a fair comparison. This figure comes to be more than 10% of the population which is 430. Donald (1967) and Miller and Smith (1983) recommend that the researcher can take a random sample of 10-20% of population to use in analyses. A total of 72 questionnaires were distributed among male leaders out of which 58 completely filled questionnaires were received back yielding a response rate of 80.50 percent which is higher than the accepted rate of 33% (Pennings et al., 2002). In case of subordinate respondents, a total of 245 questionnaires were distributed out of which 205 completely filled questionnaires were received yielding a response rate of 83.67 percent.

Design of the Questionnaire

A structured questionnaire was used for primary data collection. Since the study was meant to be carried out in various higher education institutions comprising of males and females holding the key positions and also the individuals working under them, two questionnaires were administered for this purpose. The measurement scales used in this study were adopted from some earlier prominent studies including Avolio, et al. (1999); Bergman, & Hallberg (2002); Boyd (2008); Eagly, et al. (1990); Eagly & Johnson (1990); Lewin, and Lippitt, (1938); Lewin, et al. (1999/1939); Luthar. (1996); Smith, et al (2012); Yukl, (1999); White, and Lippitt (1960). The questions were developed on a 5-point Likert scale ranging from 1 (Strongly Disagree) to 5 (Strongly Agree).

Results

The comparison has been drawn between the male and female leaders working in higher education institutions of Jammu and Kashmir on the basis of their leadership styles. It was hypothesized that 'Gender makes no difference in leadership styles'. To verify the hypothesis, independent sample t-test was applied. The hypothesis was tested at 0.05 level of significance.

The Table 1.1 depicts the mean score for male and female leaders of higher education institutions with reference to Leadership Styles dimension on 5-point Likert scale. The mean score of male leaders was found between 3.22 and 3.60. While the mean score of female leaders was slightly higher with means ranging between 2.68 and 4.01.

The difference in the mean scores of Leadership Styles dimensions across the gender was found significant for autocratic style (t-value = 3.69), task-oriented style (t-value=4.43), relationship-oriented

style (t-value= 4.43), and transactional style (t-value= 4.28). However, the mean scores which were found insignificant are democratic style (t-value= 0.96) and transformational style (t-value= 1.05). Since the differences in mean scores for all the leadership styles was not found significant we can conclude that the hypothesis “Gender makes no difference in leadership style.” is partially rejected.

Table 1.1 : Mean Score of Leadership Styles

Leadership Styles	Statistics	Male	Female	t-value
Autocratic style	Mean	3.23	2.68	3.69**
	SD	.994	.986	
Democratic style	Mean	3.22	4.00	0.96
	SD	.993	.992	
Task oriented style	Mean	3.60	3.30	2.20*
	SD	1.03	1.01	
Relationship oriented style	Mean	3.23	3.72	4.43**
	SD	.965	.995	
Transformational style	Mean	3.54	4.01	1.05
	SD	.921	.911	
Transactional style	Mean	3.47	3.32	4.28**

Note: ** significant at 99% confidence level, * significant at 95% confidence level

The second hypothesis laid down by the present study was that “there is no significant difference in the leadership styles as perceived by the leaders themselves, and those perceived by their subordinates”. To verify the hypothesis, independent sample t-test was applied. The hypothesis was tested at 0.05 level of significance.

The Table 1.2 depicts the mean score of leaders of higher education institutions and their subordinates with reference to Leadership Styles dimension on 5-point Likert scale. The mean score of leaders was found between 3.2 and 3.8. While the mean score of subordinates was slightly higher with mean ranging between 3.01 and 4.01. The difference in the mean scores of Leadership Styles dimension across the two groups, that is leaders and the subordinates was found significant for autocratic style (t-value = 3.69), democratic style (t value= 2.42), task-oriented style (t-value= 2.20) and transformational style (t-value=3.10). However, the mean scores which were found insignificant are relationship-oriented style (t-value= 1.13) and transactional style (t-value= 1.04). Since the differences in mean scores for all the leadership styles was not found significant we can conclude that the hypothesis “There is no significant difference in the leadership styles as perceived by the leaders themselves, and those perceived by their subordinates.” is partially rejected.

Table 1.2: Mean Scores of Leaders and their Subordinates

Leadership Styles	Statistics	Leaders	Subordinates	<i>t-value</i>
Autocratic style	Mean	3.8	3.5	<i>3.69**</i>
	SD	.994	.986	
Democratic style	Mean	3.17	3.01	<i>2.42*</i>
	SD	.993	.992	
Task oriented style	Mean	3.42	4.01	<i>2.20*</i>
	SD	1.03	1.01	
Relationship oriented style	Mean	3.25	3.29	<i>1.13</i>
	SD	.965	.995	
Transformational style	Mean	3.2	3.8	<i>3.10**</i>
	SD	.789	.865	
Transactional style	Mean	3.6	3.4	<i>1.04</i>
	SD	.973	.921	

*Note: ** significant at 99% confidence level, * significant at 95% confidence level*

Table 1.3: Acceptance/Rejection of Hypotheses of the Study

Hypothesis No.	Statement	Result
H₁	Gender makes no difference in leadership style.	Partially rejected.
H₂	There is no significant difference in the leadership styles as perceived by the leaders themselves, and those perceived by their subordinates.	Partially rejected.

Discussion of Results and Implications

Leadership has been an immense area of research for social scientists since decades. Because of the broader significance, it has been studied constantly by researchers by taking up different dimensions impacting different stakeholders. The present study has made an attempt to evaluate the different styles of leadership in higher education and examine whether these leadership styles are

gender specific in the light of objectives set for the study. The effective leadership continues to remain critical for every organization as the success or failure depends on how well that organization is lead. But historically the appearance of the leadership concept has naturally been shaped by masculine values. Consequently, this small universe tailor made for men involved the emergence of gender issues in leadership concept too. The role of the leader is very crucial and it becomes very important to implement the right leadership style to the right situation.

The findings of the study revealed that gender makes a difference in leadership styles and males and females lead differently. These findings are in harmony with the findings of Eagly et al. (2003) and Martin, (2015) who identified that gender has a role in exhibiting the leadership style adopted by a leader. Furthermore, these researchers argued that women leaders are more democratic as compared to the male leaders who tend to be more autocratic. The findings are also in line with Rosener (1990), who found that women tend to emerge as transformational leaders while men are likely to use a transactional leadership approach. As suggested by Jin (2010), transformational leadership incorporates the elements of empathy, sensitivity and relationship building which are associated with females. Transactional leadership is referred to as authoritative which is more of a male characteristic (Bennet, 2009). Since men and women have been created with various physiological differences, these differences impact how an individual will behave in a particular role. This can be one of the explanations why men and women tend to lead differently. On the basis of the findings, it is revealed that male and female leaders tend to lead differently; there is a need to identify the appropriate leadership styles so that overall effectiveness of the leaders will be enhanced. Furthermore the study confirmed that there is a difference in the perception of leaders and their subordinates regarding the leadership style adopted by the leaders.

From managerial perspective, there are important implications which can be derived from the findings of this research. This study contributes in providing opportunity for the people who hold the top ranks in higher education institutions including vice chancellors, registrars, etc., to manipulate the policies at the institutional levels to increase the effectiveness of those holding the key ranks. The study provides insights as to how various styles of leadership can be manipulated by males and females in order to be more effective. The findings of this study can be replicated by the managers in different sectors to enhance the leadership effectiveness and to make their organizations gender friendly by promoting gender equality at all levels within their organizations.

Limitations and Directions for Future Research

Despite the pioneering explorations of the present study, various limitations were encountered that need to be addressed in future. The first and foremost limitation of the study is the sample which constituted male and female leaders holding key positions in higher education institutions of Jammu and Kashmir state as well as their subordinates. So, the results cannot be generalized to entire education sector of the state. Secondly, given the paucity of the resources particularly financial and time, the study was restricted to Jammu and Kashmir state only. Third, the data was collected from leaders and their subordinates only, ignoring the students in higher education sector. To have a more comprehensive understanding of the leaders' overall ability, the opinion of students needs to be incorporated. Fourth, in future research, a wider range of samples from different types of organizations across various sectors should be used to test the proposed model and generalize the

Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir

findings. Finally, the future research direction might be to further refine the findings by incorporating additional items to the scale measuring the constructs of leadership styles.

References

- Avolio, B. J., Bass, B. M., & Jung, D. I. (1999). Re-examining the components of transformational and transactional leadership using the Multifactor Leadership. *Journal of occupational and organizational psychology*, 72 (4), 441-462.
- Bass, B. M. (2008). *The Bass handbook of leadership: Theory, research, & managerial applications* (4th ed.). New York, NY: Free Press.
- Bass, B. M., & Riggio, R. E. (2006). *Transformational leadership*. Psychology Press.
- Bennette, N. (2009). *Effective educational leadership*. Paul Chapman Publishing, London.
- Bergman, B., & Hallberg, L. R. M. (2002). Women in a male-dominated industry: Factor analysis of a women workplace culture questionnaire based on a grounded theory model. *Sex Roles*, 46(9-10), 311-322.
- Birnbaum R. (1989). Responsibility without authority: The impossible job of the college president. In J. C. Smart (Ed.), *Higher education handbook of theory and research*, 5 (31-56). New York: Agathon.
- Boyd, K. S. (2008). Glass ceiling. *Encyclopedia of race, ethnicity, and society*, 549-52.
- Brandser, G.C. (1996), "Women the new heroes of the business world?", *Women in Management Review*, 11 (2), 3-17.
- Burke, S., & Karen K. M. (2010). Gender differences in leadership styles and management skills. *Women in Management Review*, 16 (5), 244-257.
- Cohen, M D., & March, J G. (1947). *Leadership and ambiguity: The American college president* (2nd ed.). Boston: Harvard Business School Press.
- Dastmalchian, A., and H. Kabasakal, guest eds. 2001. Leadership and culture in the Middle East: Norms, practices and effective leadership attributes in Iran, Kuwait, Turkey and Qatar. *Applied Psychology: An International Review*, 50 (4), 479-595.
- Donald, M. N., (1967), Implications of non-response for the interpretation of mail questionnaire data. *Public opinion quarterly*, 24(1), 99-114.
- Eagly, A. H., & Heilman, M. E. (2016). Gender and leadership: Introduction to the special issue. *Leadership Quarterly*, 27(3), 349-353.
- Eagly, A. H., & Johnson, B. T. (1990). Gender and Leadership Style: A Meta-Analysis. *Psychological Bulletin*, 108 (2), 233-256.

- Eagly, A. H., & Johnson, A. M.. (2004). A behavior genetic investigation of the relationship between leadership and personality. *Twin Research and Human Genetics*, 7(1), 27-32.
- Eagly, A.H & Karau, S.J. (2002). Gender and leadership style among school principals: A meta-analysis. *Educational Administration Quarterly*, 28(1), 76102.
- Eagly, A.H., and van Engen, M.L. (2003), "Transformational, transactional, and laissez faire leadership styles: a meta-analysis comparing women and men", *Psychological Bulletin*, 129 (4), 569-91.
- Eby, L. T., & Allen, T. D. (2012). *Personal relationships: The effect on employee attitudes, behavior, and well-being*. New York: Routledge.
- Fine, M. G. (2009). Women leaders' discursive constructions of leadership. *Women's Studies in Communication*, 180-202.
- Graen, G.B., & Uhl-Bien, M. (1995). Partnership-making applies equally well to teammate-sponsor teammate-competence network, and teammate-teammate relationships. *Journal of Management Systems*, 3(3), 49-54.
- Griffin, L. L.,. (2012). Staying the Course: A Model Leadership Preparation Program that Goes the Distance. *Planning and Changing*, 43, 57-71.
- Heim, P., & Murphy, S. (2001). *In the Company of Women: Turning Workplace Conflict into Powerful Alliances*. New York: Putnam
- Hoyt, C. L. (2013). Women and leadership. In P. G. Northouse (Ed.), *Leadership: Theory and Practice* (4th ed.). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Hoyt, C. L., & Simon, S. (2016). Gender and leadership. *Leadership theory and practice*, 397-426.
- Jagd, S. 2010, *Leadership*, Encyclopedia of Business In Today's World. 2009. SAGE Publications.
- Jin, Y. (2010). Emotional leadership as a key dimension of public relations leadership: National survey of public relations leaders, *Journal of Public Relations Research*, 22 (2), 159-181.
- Lewin, K., & Lippitt, R. (1938). An experimental approach to the study of autocracy and democracy: A preliminary note. *Sociometry*, 1(3/4), 292-300.
- Lewin, K., Lippitt, R., & White, R.K. (1999/1939). Patterns of aggressive behavior in experimentally created 'social climates' in M. Gold (Ed.), *The complete social scientist: a Kurt Lewin reader* (pp. 227-250). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.
- Lussier, R. N., Achua, C. F. (2009). *Leadership: Theory, application, and skill development*. Mason, OH: SouthWestern.

Investigating the Phenomenology of Gender and Leadership Styles: A Study of Leadership in Higher Education Institutions of Jammu and Kashmir

Luthar, H. K. (1996). Gender differences in evaluation of performance and leadership ability: Autocratic vs. democratic managers. *Sex Roles*, 35(5-6), 337-361.

Martins, E. C. (2015). Building organisational culture that stimulates creativity and innovation. *European journal of innovation management*, 6(1), 64-74.

Memon R. K. (2014). Effects of Leadership Styles on Employee Performance: Integrating the Mediating Role of Culture, Gender and Moderating Role of Communication. *International Journal of Management Sciences and Business Research*, 2014 ISSN (3)

Miller, L. E., & Smith, K. L., (1983), Handling non response issues. *Journal of extension*, 21, 45-50. 7.

Moran, B. B. (1992). Gender differences in leadership. *Library trends*, 40(3), 475-491.

Nanjundeswaraswamy, T. S., & Swamy, D. R. (2014). Leadership styles. *Advances in Management*, 7(2), 5762.

Northhouse, P. G. (2013). *Leadership: Theory and practice* (5th ed.). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Oakley, A. (2000). *Experiments in knowing: Gender and method in the social sciences*.

Oshagbemi, T. (1997). Job satisfaction and dissatisfaction in higher education. *Education Training*, 39(9), 354-359.

Osseo-Asare, A.E., Longbottom, D. and Murphy, W.D. (2005). Leadership best practices for sustaining quality in UK higher education from perspective of the EFQM excellence model. *Quality Assurance in Education*, 13(2), 148-170.

Park, D. (1996), Gender role, decision style and leadership style. *Women in Management Review*, 11(8), 13-17.

Pennings, J.M.E., Scott, H.I. and Good, D.L. (2002). Surveying Farmers: A Case Study. *Review of Agricultural Economics*, 24(1), 266-277.

Rosener, J. B. (1990, November-December). Ways women lead. *Harvard Business Review*, 68(6), 119-125.

Shimanoff, S.B. and Jenkins, M.M. (1991). Leadership and gender: challenging assumptions and recognizing resources, In: Cathcart, R.S. and Samovar, L.A. (Eds.).

Smith, P., Crittenden, N., & Caputi, P. (2012). Measuring women's beliefs about glass ceilings: development of the Career Pathways Survey. *Gender in Management: An International Journal*, 27(2), 68-80.

White, R. K., & Lippitt, R. (1960). *Autocracy and democracy: An experimental inquiry*. New York: Harper.

Yukl, G. (1999). An evaluation of conceptual weaknesses in transformational and charismatic leadership theories. *The leadership quarterly*, 10(2), 285-305.

Yukl, G. (2010). *Leadership in Organizations*. Englewood Cliffs, N.J. Prentice-Hall.

Mediating Role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards Visual Merchandising in Online Context

Farah.S.Choudhary* and Alka Sharma**

ABSTRACT

Present research work aims to empirically investigate the relationship between online visual merchandising and customer approach-avoidance behaviour in online context. With the Stimulus-Organism-Response framework given by Mehrabian and Russell, 1974 as the base model, the study also aims to understand the mediation effect of affective state including pleasure and arousal state in the relationship of Online Visual Merchandising and Customer Approach-Avoidance Behavior. Based on the sample of 400 online shoppers or browsers of Delhi and Mumbai of Flipkart and Amazon India, the hypothesized relationships of the model were empirically tested by applying Sobel test and SEM technique. The results indicated that there is a partial mediation of affective state in the relationship of Online Visual Merchandising and customer Approach-Avoidance behavior. Thus, suggesting that the online retailers should try to develop and design their website in such a manner that the Pleasure and Arousal state of the customers are satisfied in totality with greater focus on the arousal component.

Keywords: Online Visual Merchandising, Arousal State, Pleasure State, Approach-Avoidance Behaviour, S-O-R Model

Introduction

Worldwide Organizations have witnessed a paradigm shift in the business with the growth of e-commerce. In 2015, the total retail e-commerce sales worldwide amounted to 1.55 trillion US dollars and it is expected that by 2019, e-retail revenues will grow to 3.4 trillion US dollars. This indicates that online shopping is one of the most prevalent online activities in the world. Further, as per a report by the market research firm Internet and Mobile Association of India (IAMAI), 2017; the Internet users in India have reached 450-465 million with 13.5% share of world internet users. One of the key outcomes of this exponential increase has been the online retail in India, which has experienced growth at a phenomenal rate, from being worth about \$3.9 billion in 2009 to \$38 billion in 2016 according to ASSOCHAM. This rapid growth is due to an increase in acceptance of technology, improved standards of living, growth in young population and increasing access to the Internet through broadband, smartphones and tablets and coming of 4G in India.

* Assistant Professor, The Business School, University of Jammu, India

** Professor, The Business School, University of Jammu, India

The above discussion clearly suggests that e-retail in India has significant opportunity across all segments, therefore investors have been aggressively financing the e-commerce sector. However, with the entry of global e-commerce giants like Amazon and Alibaba in India, the competition in India has intensified for home players like Flipkart, Myntra, Jabong and Snapdeal. As a result of this, the e-commerce sites are searching for new techniques to attract customers. The emergence of severe competition has made online retailers to use web environment and its elements in more effective and efficient manner so as to create a positive impact on the customers. Thus, to improve shopping experience, online retailers must conceptualize and design an online environment in such a manner that it facilitates consumer interactions (Dailey, 2004).

Traditionally, merchandising has referred to the products kept on the shelf and are being offered in the store. But, nowadays there's a lot more to it. Merchandising is defined as "the variety of goods/services available for selling and the display of those products in such a manner that it stimulates interest and encourages customers to buy a product." It's the second part of that definition: "such a manner that it stimulates interest and encourages customers to buy a product." that is the core of visual merchandising (Upadhyay, Aditya & Jauhari, Sangeeta & Vijay Singh, Dr. 2017). Unlike visual merchandising of a brick and mortar store that can stimulate interest of a customer through all the five senses (Kotler, 1973), online visual merchandising has only the screen and its image to attract the consumers. Thus, online visual merchandising is all the more crucial for the online retailers as they have limited control over other senses (Eroglu, Machleit, & Davis, 2001).

Also, it is seen from the previous researches that there is a lack of comprehensive framework of online visual merchandising elements and none of the division is as per Indian online retail environment.

Thus, the discussion above highlights relevance of studying Visual Merchandising (VM) in online context. The present study attempts to analyse effectiveness of the OVM of main websites in India, that is Flipkart and Amazon, India. The study further attempts to analyse the effect of OVM on customer response behaviour. The outcomes of the analysis have indicated that OVM have been a successful tool in attracting and appealing customers towards a website. The findings also convey that customers have to design OVM in a manner that stimulate consumers' pleasure and arousal state.

Literature Review

Visual merchandising of a store is defined as visual stimulus that communicates store image and product information to consumers in a retail store environment. (McGoldrick, 1990; Pegler, 2001; Park et al., 2013). According to Kotler (1973), visual merchandising is everything the customers see in a store that creates a positive image of a business and results in attention, interest, desire and action on the part of the customer. From the past few decades, studies on the environment have not only been applied to the traditional store based retailing but also to the online stores. However, very little attention has been given to visual merchandising in an electronic retail store. Unlike the traditional stores which can attract consumers appealing to all five senses, online retailing is dependent almost

entirely on the visual appeal which a consumer experiences via screen. In retail store, customers can physically try on garments; feel the fabric and can read information on care and content labels. However, online shoppers many times avoid purchasing things online due to uncertainty of garment colour, fabric and details (Ji & Pang, 2006). Thus, Visual Merchandising is an important aspect for the online retailers. (Eroglu, Machleit, & Davis, 2001).

Application of the Stimulus-Organism-Response framework to the current research

Mehrabian and Russell proposed the S-O-R model as an approach to environmental psychology. Mehrabian and Russell (1974) considered the sensory variables and information rate in the environment as the stimulus. The paper stated that an individual's character will have an effect on the affective state, which then results in approach-avoidance response behavior (Mehrabian and Russell, 1974) (see figure 1).

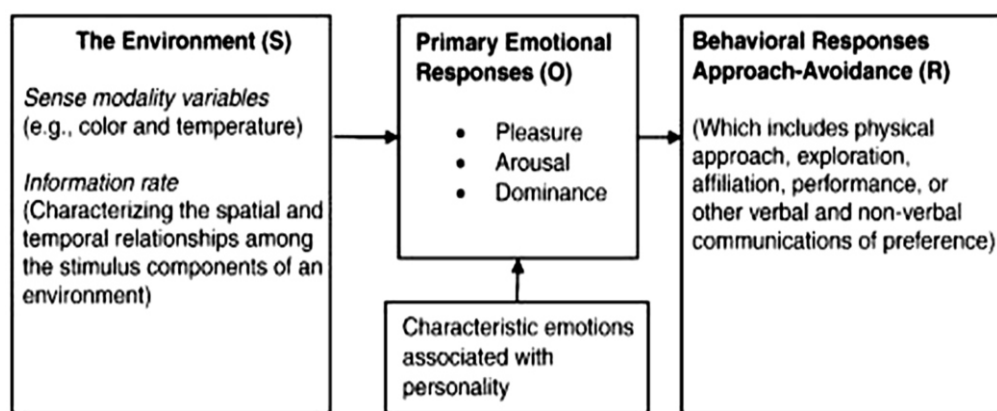


Figure 1. Stimulus-Organism-Response Model (Mehrabian & Russell, 1974, p.8)

Online visual merchandising elements were chosen and organized based on a review of past studies as the stimuli which are also the independent variables. Emotional variables, that is Pleasure and Arousal were included in the organism part. In the response part, the approach and avoidance behavior variable was used in this research.

Mediation effect of organism between stimulus and response

According to S-O_R paradigm proposed by Mehrabian and Russell (1974), customer emotions has a mediating effect on various consumer response behaviors Based on the S-O-R framework, previous researchers analysed the effects of consumers' emotions as mediators between atmospheric stimuli and consumers' buying behaviours (Eroglu et al., 2003; Menon & Kahn, 2002; Sherman et al, 1997; Spies et al., 1997).

Babin & Babin, (2001); Baker et al., (1992); Sanjeev Prashar, (2017), Spies et al, (1997) found that the high levels of pleasure and arousal stimulated by the environmental stimuli increase purchase intention and approach behaviours such as desire to explore and to shop (Eroglu et al., 2003; Menon & Kahn, 2002). Earlier studies examined the effect of store colours on consumers' buying behaviours such as approach behavior and purchase intention (Babin et al., 2003; Bellizi, Chowley & Hasty,

1983). Customers' evaluation and enthusiasm provoked by the colour of store atmosphere were positively related to store purchase and loyalty intentions (Babin et al., 2003).

In Internet shopping context, Eroglu et al. (2003) found the important effects of pleasure and arousal on customer approach behaviours. Previous studies observed that consumers' approach or avoidance to the environment could be mediated by their emotional responses (Donovan & Rossiter, 1982; Holbrook & Gardner, 1993). Baker et al. (1992) showed the mediation influence of pleasure and arousal state between store environment and customers' purchase intention. Sherman et al. (1997) observed that in retail stores, pleasure and arousal state mediates the relationship between atmospheric elements and consumer buying behaviours. Furthermore, Eroglu et al., (2003); Menon & Kahn, (2003) discovered this mediating affect in online context. In Internet shopping context, consumer emotions stimulated by atmospheric stimuli positively affect approach behaviours for instance browsing more, engaging in impulse buying, and looking for more stimulating products. (Eroglu et al., 2003; Fiore et al., 2005; Menon & Kahn, 2003). In addition, Sherman et al. (1997) investigated that store's atmosphere shows the visual aspects of store and social environment have a positive effect on pleasure, which can incite approach behaviours, for example, liking towards the store and buying more. In online retailing, Ha and Lennon (2010) observed various online visual merchandising elements' effect on consumer pleasure and arousal state while browsing or purchasing. Thus, to conclude it can be found that pleasure and arousal state which are affected by visual elements were positively connected to consumers' approach behavior and also, they mediate merchandising elements' and consumer response.

Therefore, it is predicted that in online context, consumer emotions, that is pleasure and arousal will mediate the relationship between online visual merchandising elements and consumer response behaviours for instance purchase intention and approach behaviours. This argument led to the development of the following hypothesis:

H1: Relationship between Online visual merchandising and customer response behavior is mediated by emotional states.

RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

Sampling

As per the eBay India Census survey (2013) Delhi, Mumbai, Bangalore, Hyderabad and Chennai have emerged as the top five metro cities that shop online. Also, as per the findings of the survey by couponzguru.com done in 2014, in online retailing, Bengaluru has the highest online traffic share of 15%.

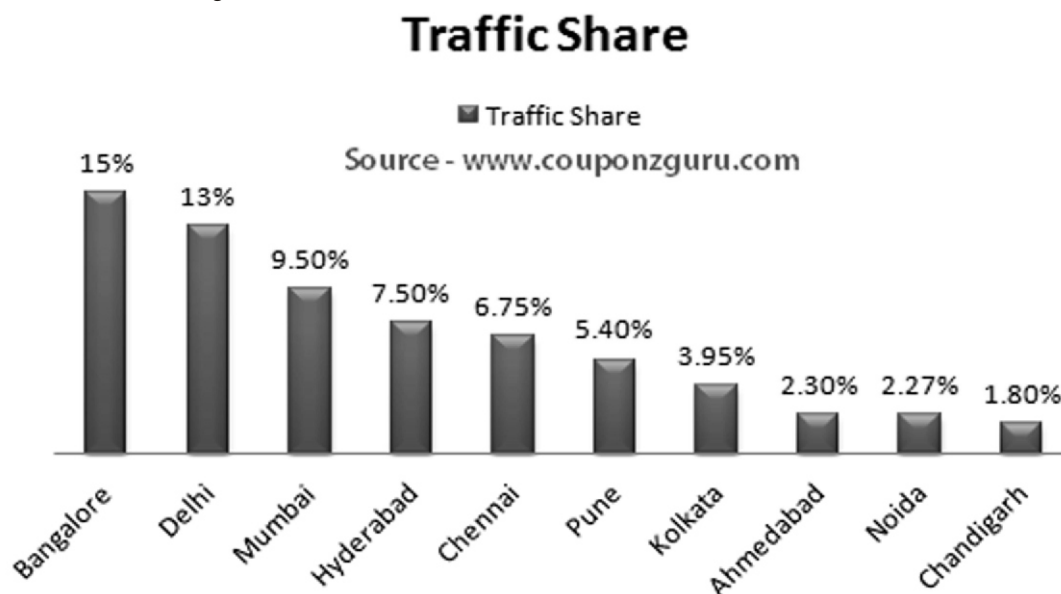


Figure 2: Traffic Share

Further, the survey conducted by eBay India, 2016 about the consumer analysis indicates that India's desire for shopping products online majorly focuses on fashion and beauty products. This report also reveals that Mumbai, Delhi, Bengaluru, Chennai, Pune, Hyderabad, Kolkata, Ahmedabad and Jaipur as the Top 9 e-commerce hubs in India. Amongst these cities, Mumbai has emerged as the city with a highest number of online shoppers in India.

Thus, based on the findings of these surveys, it was important to collect the data from the customers of top 6 metropolitan cities which have highest number of online shoppers in India. Hence, the cities selected are as follow:

- ▶ Delhi
- ▶ Mumbai

Further, it is pertinent to mention that the research focuses on multi- category websites namely:

- ▶ Flipkart
- ▶ Amazon India

These sites have been selected due to the fact that they are the most popular websites in India for online shopping. Also as per a survey by Retailopia for the year 2013, these sites are in the list of top 10 shopping websites in India. Moreover, as per a survey done by a website named www.bloggerideas.com in April 2017 about the top online best shopping websites in India in the year 2017, these 2 websites have been listed as the top five websites in India. Further, another survey done by Allusefulinfo in the year 2016 about the five best and trusted websites in India, Flipkart and Amazon

India were rated as the two best and trusted websites for online shopping in India.

Sample Size

The sample size has been arrived at by using formula (Malhotra and Dash 2009):

$$n = \frac{\pi(1-\pi)Z^2}{D^2} = \frac{(0.7)(1-0.7)(1.96)^2}{(0.05)^2} = 322.7$$

N = Sample Size

Z = Z-value (e.g., 1.96 for a 95 percent confidence level) {Cumulative Normal Probability Table} represent the probability that a sample will fall within a certain distribution.}

π = Percentage of population picking a choice, expressed as decimal

D = Confidence interval, expressed as decimal (e.g., .04 = +/- 4 percentage points)

As per the above-mentioned formula 323 responses were sufficient to capture the customer's behaviour for the purpose of the study.

Moreover, it has been noted during literature survey that majority of researches regarding online shopping have been conducted using sample size of 150 to 300 respondents (Jiajing Wu, 2014; Mehrabian and Russell, 1974; Donovan and Rossiter, 1982; Bitner, 1992; Lewison, 1994; Sherman et al., 1997; Eroglu et al., 2001; Eroglu et al., 2003; Van & Verhaegen, 2004; Verchopoulos et al., 2004; Ha et al., 2007; Tsao and Chang, 2010; Hunter and Mukerji, 2011).

Therefore, a final sample of 400, that is (200 respondents from each of the two selected websites) was taken.

Questionnaire Development

As the research is consumer centric, the data has been collected using the field survey method. For this, a structured questionnaire was framed, pre-tested and personally administered to the target population of individual online shoppers. An extensive literature was reviewed in order to develop appropriate scales for this research.

The initial questionnaire contained 7-Likert scale items adopted from past studies however modified to fit the context of the research topic. Only the affective, that is pleasure and arousal state has been measured on a bipolar scale.

DATA ANALYSIS

The Sobel test was applied to find the mediation effect. The Sobel test presents a statistical test to understand whether the indirect path from the independent variable to the dependent variable is statistically different from zero. The test proposes the following equation for estimating indirect effects: □

$$Z\text{-value} = a \cdot b / \text{SQRT}(b^2 \cdot sa^2 + a^2 \cdot sb^2).$$

This formula involves the unstandardized regression coefficient (a) and the standard error (sa) of the relationship between the independent variable a, and the unstandardized regression coefficient (b) and standard error (sb) of the path from the mediator to the dependent variable. The table 2 to table 6 show results of Sobel Test for mediation effect.

Mediating effect of pleasure between Online Visual Merchandising and approach/avoidance behaviour

The impact of 'Pleasure State' as a mediator between the Online Visual Merchandising (independent variable) and Approach/Avoidance Behaviour (Dependent variable) has been studied in the following steps.

Table 1: Regression for online visual merchandising (IV) and Approach/Avoidance Behaviour (DV)

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.943	.065	0.528	17.056	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM)

Table 2: Regression of mediator pleasure state and online visual merchandising (IV)

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.304	.065	0.114	5.378	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM)

Table 3: Regression equation of online visual merchandising on Approach/Avoidance Behaviour controlling the mediator pleasure state.

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.917	.063	0.501	14.764	.000
P	.011	.046	0.006	.656	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM), Pleasure (P)

It can be comprehended from table 1 and table 3 that the Beta coefficient for Online Visual Merchandising Approach/Avoidance behaviour decreases from 0.528 to 0.501 when pleasure state is added to the regression. This implies that pleasure state may be having a mediating effect. The significant values required for the Sobel test for mediation are Online Visual Merchandising Approach/Avoidance Behaviour: unstandardized coefficient (a) = 0.304, standard error (sa) = 0.065 (Table 2) and Pleasure Approach/Avoidance Behaviour, with Online Visual Merchandising controlled: unstandardized coefficient (b) = 0.011, standard error (sb) = 0.046 (Table 3).

Putting all the values in the formula,

$$Z=0.2388, p=0.8112$$

So, as per this mediation analysis, it is proved that pleasure does not mediate the relationship between Online Visual Merchandising and Approach/Avoidance behaviour.

Mediating effect of Arousal between Online Visual Merchandising and approach/avoidance behaviour

The impact of Arousal State as a mediator between the online visual merchandising (independent variable) and Approach/Avoidance Behaviour (Dependent variable) has been studied in the following steps.

Table 4: Regression of mediator arousal state and online visual merchandising (IV)

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.756	.041	0.527	14.165	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM)

Table 5: Regression equation of online visual merchandising on Approach/Avoidance Behaviour controlling the mediator arousal state

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.854	.089	0.419	11.228	.000
A	.246	.065	0.184	4.346	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM), Arousal (A)

It can be comprehended from table 1 and table 5 that the Beta coefficient for Online Visual Merchandising Approach/Avoidance behaviour decreases from 0.528 to 0.419 when arousal state is added to the regression. This implies that arousal state may be having a mediating effect. The significant values required for the Sobel test for mediation are Online Visual Merchandising Approach/Avoidance Behaviour: unstandardized coefficient (a) = 0.756, standard error (sa) = 0.041 (Table 4) and

Mediating role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards Visual Merchandising in Online Context

Arousal Approach/Avoidance Behaviour, with Online Visual Merchandising controlled: unstandardized coefficient (b) =0.246, standard error (sb) =0.065(Table 5).

Putting all the values in the formula,

$$Z=3.707, p= 0.000$$

So, as per this mediation analysis, it is proved that Arousal does mediate the relationship between Online Product Image and Approach/Avoidance behaviour.

To sum up, we can conclude that arousal mediates the relationship between Online Visual Merchandising and Approach/Avoidance behaviour.

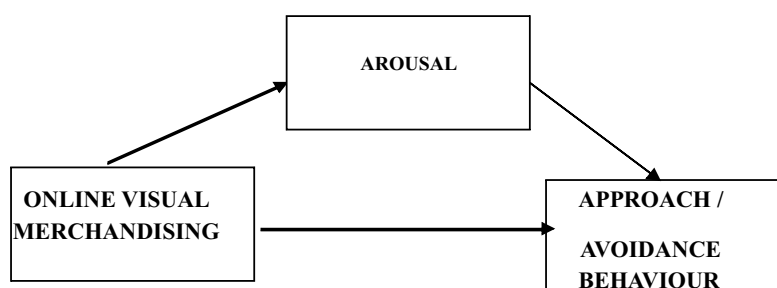


Figure 3: Arousal Model

Mediating effect of Affective (Pleasure and Arousal) State between Online Visual Merchandising and approach/avoidance behaviour

The impact of Affective (Pleasure + Arousal) State as a mediator between the online visual merchandising (independent variable) and Approach/Avoidance Behaviour (Dependent variable) has been shown in Table: 6 (i), 6 (ii) and 6 (iii).

Table 6 (i): Regression for online visual merchandising (IV) and Approach/Avoidance Behaviour (DV)

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.983	.119	0.632	18.443	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM)

Table 6 (ii): Regression of mediator Affective (Pleasure + Arousal) State and online visual merchandising (IV)

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.567	.095	0.114	4.234	.000

Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM)

Table 6 (iii): Regression equation of online visual merchandising on Approach/Avoidance Behaviour controlling the mediator Affective (Pleasure + Arousal) State.

Model	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients	t	Sig.
	B	Std. Error	Beta		
OVM	.924	.063	0.534	15.349	.000
AF	.366	.046	0.067	3.991	.000

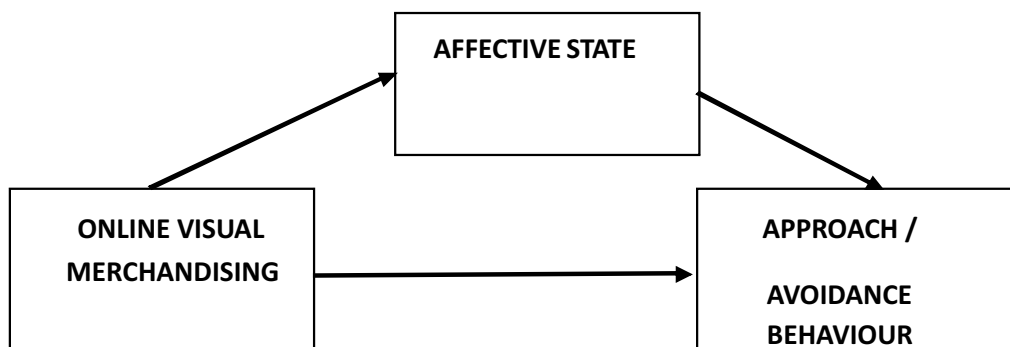
Note: Online Visual Merchandising (OVM), Affective State (AF).

It can be comprehended from table 6 (i) and table 6 (iii) that the Beta coefficient for Online Visual Merchandising → Approach/Avoidance behaviour decreases from 0.623 to 0.534 when pleasure state is added to the regression. This implies that Affective (Pleasure + Arousal) State may be having a mediating effect. The significant values required for the Sobel test for mediation are Online Visual Merchandising → Approach/Avoidance Behaviour: unstandardized coefficient (a) =0.567, standard error (sa) = 0.095 (Table 6 (ii)) and Affective (Pleasure + Arousal) State → Approach/ Avoidance Behaviour, with Online Visual Merchandising controlled: unstandardized coefficient (b) =0.366, standard error (sb) =0.046 (Table 6 (iii)).

Putting all the values in the formula,

$$Z=4.7744, p=0.0000$$

According to this mediation analysis, it is proved that in total Affective (Pleasure + Arousal) State do mediate the relationship between Online Visual Merchandising and Approach/Avoidance behaviour.

**Figure 4: Affective State Model**

Furthermore, the mediation analysis was also validated by using bootstrapping technique in SEM as recommended by Hayes (2009). The Table 7 shows that indirect effect for Online Visual Merchandising and Approach/Avoidance Behaviour through Pleasure and Arousal state were significant at 0.043 and 0.036 respectively at $p < 0.05$. Thus, suggesting partial mediation.

Table 7: Results of Mediation Analysis

<i>PATHS</i>	<i>PATH DIRECTION</i>	<i>DIRECT EFFECT P-value</i>	<i>INDIRECT EFFECT P-value</i>	<i>SIGNIFICANT/ INSIGNIFICANT</i>	<i>DIRECT EFFECT value</i>	<i>INDIRECT EFFECT value</i>	<i>RESULT</i>
<i>1</i>	<i>OVM→P→AA</i>	<i>0.021*</i>	<i>0.043</i>	<i>Significant</i>	<i>0.405</i>	<i>0.237</i>	<i>Partial Mediation</i>
<i>2</i>	<i>OVM→A→AA</i>		<i>0.036</i>	<i>Significant</i>		<i>0.181</i>	

Note: * *p-value* < 0.05

The results above also suggest that pleasure and arousal when combined have a mediating role between online visual merchandising and customer response behaviour. Therefore, the results of the present study imply that the marketers should try to manage online visual merchandising elements in such a manner that the pleasure and arousal state of the customers are satisfied in totality with greater focus on the arousal component.

Findings and Conclusion

The results of mediation analysis propose that pleasure and arousal when combined have a mediating role between online visual merchandising and customer response behaviour. Also, the findings in the Study reveal that there is a significant effect of emotions (pleasure and arousal) on consumer response behaviour. Customers who experience greater pleasure and arousal while browsing a website tend to be satisfied with the website and have greater approach behaviours (e.g., desire to explore or shop) than those who experience less pleasure and arousal. Findings also suggest that customers more aroused by website tend to have greater satisfaction with the website and enjoy on the shopping and exploring the website.

Thus, it is important for online retailers to build pleasant and arousing websites with greater focus on the arousal component to increase consumers' approach behaviour. Various Online Visual Merchandising elements may help online retailers to develop more pleasant and arousing websites that subsequently generate positive consumer response behaviours.

The results of the study also validate the S-O-R paradigm given by Mehrabian & Russell, 1974 predicting the emotional state (pleasure and arousal state) as mediators in the relationship between various Online Visual Merchandising elements and consumer response behaviour.

Besides the academic contribution, the result of the study indicates several implications for the industry as a whole. Firstly, the results of the present study have further confirmed the significance of web atmospheric elements for consumers' emotional responses and customer response behaviour. The results of the study support the conclusion that a better design and higher level of web atmospheric cues (such as Atmospherics, Online Density, Model appeal, Product Presentation, Website navigation, Website Advertising and Online Product Image) have a positive effect on consumers' emotional states and on the customer's behaviour. This information can help retailers, marketers, and researchers to develop and market their merchandise more efficiently by deliberating the effect of online visual merchandising cues on consumers' response and affective states.

Hence, the present research provides valuable information to online retailers to develop new strategies for visual merchandising of their websites in order to attract both online browsers who visit a website without a purchasing goal and shoppers who visit a website with a purchasing goal. Online Visual Merchandising elements may help online retailers to create the websites that draws the attention of new customers. To attract online browsers without intention to purchase, online retailers have to differentiate their websites from other online retailers like more colourful icons and background and dynamic image display may stimulate online browsers' pleasure and arousal that affect their subsequent approach behaviour towards a website.

Thus, the online retailers need to strategically design their Online Visual Merchandising as a tool to differentiate their website from competitors and gain an edge in virtual market. Online Visual Merchandising is a significant tool for attracting customers; thus, it should be designed effectively and efficiently. Additionally, the web companies should try to create a website that stimulate the emotional state of the customer.

References

- Allusefulinfo (2016). Retrieved from 13 December 2016 <http://allusefulinfo.com/5-best-trusted-online-shopping-websites-in-india/>
- Baker, J., Levy, M., & Grewal, D. (1992). An experimental approach to making retail store environmental decisions. *Journal of Retailing*, 68, 445-460.
- Baker, J., Parasuraman, A., Grewal, D., & Voss, G. B. (2002). The influence of multiple store environment cues on perceived merchandise value and patronage intentions. *Journal of Marketing*, 65, 120-141.
- Babin, B. J., & Babin, L. (2001). Seeking something different? A model of schema typicality, consumer affect, purchase intentions and perceived shopping value. *Journal of Business Research*, 54, 89-96.
- Babin, B. J., Hardesty, D. M., & Suter, T. A. (2003). Color and shopping intentions: The interviewing effect of price fairness and perceived affect. *Journal of Business Research*, 56 (7), 541-552.
- Belliizzi, J. A., Crowley, A. E., & Hasty, R. W. (1983). The effects of color in store design. *Journal of retailing*, 59, 21-45.

Mediating role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards
Visual Merchandising in Online Context

- Bellizzi, J. A. & Hite, R. E. (1992). Environmental color, consumer feelings, and purchase likelihood. *Psychology & Marketing*, 9, 347-363.
- Bloggersideas (2017). Retrieved 13 December 2016 from <http://www.bloggersideas.com/top-10-online-shopping-sites-in-india-best-shopping-sites-india/>
- Couponzguru.com (2014). Retrieved 13 December 2016 from <http://blog.couponzguru.com/top-indian-cities-online-shoppers/>
- Dailey L.C, (2004). Navigational Web Atmospherics: Explaining the Influence of Restrictive Navigation Cues. *Journal of Policy*, 13(1), 38-48.
- Donovan, R. J., & Rossiter, J. R. (1982). Store atmosphere: An environmental psychology approach. *Journal of Retailing*, 58 (1), 34-57.
- Donovan, R. J., Rossiter, J. R., Marcoolyn, G., & Nesdale, A. (1994). Store atmosphere and purchasing behavior. *Journal of Retailing*, 70 (3), 284-294.
- eBay India Census survey (2013). Retrieved 13 December 2016 from http://www.indiaretailing.com/uploads/banner_pdf/eBay_Census_Report_2013_Final.pdf
- eBay India (2016). Retrieved 13 December 2016 from <http://retail.economictimes.indiatimes.com/slide-shows/what-top-9-cities-of-india-purchased-online-ebay-india-survey/51629938>
- Eroglu, S. A., Machleit, K. A., & Davis, L. M. (2003). Empirical testing of a model of online store atmospherics and shopper responses. *Psychology & Marketing*, 20 (2), 139-150.
- Eroglu, S.A., Machleit, K. and Davis, L., (2001). Atmospheric qualities of online retailing: a conceptual model and implications. *Journal of Business Research*, 54, 177-184.
- Fiore, A. M., & Jin, H. (2003). Influence of image interactivity on approach responses towards an online retailer. *Internet Research*, 13(1), 38-48.
- Fiore, A. M., Jin, H., & Kim, J. (2005). For fun and profit: Hedonic value from image interactivity and responses toward an online store. *Psychology & Marketing*, 22 (8), 669-694.
- Ha, Y., & Lennon, S. J. (2010). Online visual merchandising (VMD) cues and consumer pleasure and arousal: Purchasing versus browsing situation. *Psychology & Marketing*, 27(2), 141-165.
- Ha, Y., Kwon, W. S., & Lennon, J. S., (2007). Online visual merchandising (VMD) of apparel website. *Journal of Fashion Marketing and Management*, 11(4), pp. 477-493.
- Holbrook, M. B., & Gardner, M. P. (1993). An approach to investigating the emotional determinants of consumption durations: Why do people consume what they consume for as long as they consume it? *Journal of Consumer Psychology*, 2(2), 123-142.

- Hunter, R. and Mukerji, Bh., (2011). The Role of Atmospherics in Influencing Consumer Behaviour in the Online Environment. *International Journal of Business and Social Science*, 2(9), 118-125.
- Internet and Mobile Association of India (IAMAI) and IMRB International, (2017), Report on —Indian Ecommerce□, 2016-17. Available at: cci.gov.in/images/media/ResearchReports/AnkitaIntComp080811.pdf
- Ji, X., & Pang, C. (2006). Online visual merchandising of apparel e-retailers. *IEEE Xplore*. Retrieved August 17, 2017 from <http://ieeexplore.ieee.org/stamp/stamp.jsp?Tp=&amumber=4279873&isnumber=4279779>
- Jiajing Wu (2014). Consumer Response to Online Visual Merchandising Cues: A Case Study of Forever. The Graduate School of The University of Minnesota (Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation)
- Kotler, P. (1973). Atmospherics as a marketing tool. *Journal of Retailing*, 49(4), 48-64.
- Lewison, D.M., (1994). *Retailing*. 5th ed. New York, Macmillan College Publishing
- Malhotra, N.K. and Dash, S. (2009). *Marketing research: An Applied Orientation* (5th Edition.), Pearson education, Inc.
- McGoldrick, P., (2002 and 1990). *Retail Marketing*. Second edition. McGraw-Hill, Maidenhead, USA.
- Mehrabian, A., & Russell, J. A. (1974). *An approach to environmental psychology*. the MIT Press.
- Menon, S., & Kahn, B. (2002). Cross-category effects of induced arousal and pleasure on the Internet shopping experience. *Journal of Retailing*, 78, 31-40.
- Park, J., Han, H., & Park, J. (2013). Psychological antecedents and risk on attitudes toward e-customization. *Journal of Business Research*, 66(12), 2552-2559.
- Pegler, M. (2001). *Visual merchandising and display*. New York: Fairchild Publications.
- Retailopia (2013). Retrieved 18 December 2016 from <http://www.retailopia.com/2013/08/list-of-online-shopping-websites-india.html>
- Tsao W-C, Chang H-R. (2010). Exploring the impact of personality traits on online shopping behaviour. *Journal of Business Management*, 4(9), 1800-1812.
- Sanjeev Prashar, (2017). Effects of Online Shopping Values and Website Cues on Purchase Behaviour: A Study Using SOR Framework. *VIKALPA: The Journal for Decision Makers*, 42(1) 118.

Mediating role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards Visual Merchandising in Online Context

Sherman, E., Mathur, A., & Smith, R. B. (1997). Store environment and consumer purchase behavior: Mediating role of consumer emotions. *Psychology & Marketing*, 14(4), 361-378.

Spies, K., Hesse, F., & Loesch, K. (1997). Store atmospheres, mood and purchasing behavior. *International Journal of Research in Marketing*, 14, 1-17.

Upadhyay, Aditya & Jauhari, Sangeeta & Vijay Singh, Dr. (2017). VISUAL MERCHANDISING: An Integrative Review. *Indian Journal of Applied Research*. 7. 356-359.

Van der Heijden, H., & Verhagen, T. (2004). Online store image: Conceptual foundations and empirical measurement. *Information & Management*, 41(5), 609-617.

Vrechopoulos, A. P., O'Keefe, R. M., Doukidis, G. I., & Siomkos, G. J. (2004). Virtual store layout: An experimental comparison in the context of grocery retail. *Journal of Retailing*, 80(1), 13-22.

Appendix

Online Visual Merchandising

Colour of the Website

1. The colour theme and text of the website are visually pleasing.
2. The colour theme and text of the website are trendy.
3. The colour theme and text of the website are attractive.

Layout

1. The layout of the website is well structured.
2. The layout of the website has good displays.
3. The layout of the website is consistent with overall style.

Product Image Quality

1. The website looks nice because of the product image quality.
2. The product image quality is good.
3. The product image quality is visually comforting.

Online Density

1. The product density (number of pictures in a page) is appropriate.
2. The product density is visually attractive.
3. The product density is systematized.

Model Appeal

1. The model present the products properly.
2. The model in the pictures are good-looking.

3. The models of the website are visually calming.

Product Presentation

1. Interactivity of product presentation is appropriate.
2. Interactivity of product presentation is lively.
3. Interactivity of product presentation is engaging.
4. Interactivity of product presentation is stimulating.

Website Navigation

1. The website has good presentation of products.
2. The website is easy to use.
3. The navigation of the website is easy.
4. The website is flexible to use.

Website Advertising

1. The banner ads and promotional text have clear messages.
2. The banner ads and promotional text are knowledgeable.
3. The banner ads and promotional text are engaging.

Emotional State

Pleasure

1. Happy Unhappy.
2. Pleased Annoyed.
3. Dissatisfied Satisfied.
4. Despairing Hopeful.
5. Bored Relaxed.
6. Contented Melancholic.

Arousal

1. Frenzied Sluggish.
2. Dull Jittery.
3. Unaroused Aroused.
4. Relaxed Simulated.
5. Calm Excited.
6. Wide awake Sleepy.

Approach/Avoidance Behaviour

Mediating role of Analysis of Affective State for Generating Consumer Response Towards
Visual Merchandising in Online Context

1. I enjoyed visiting the website.
2. I was frustrated while looking at the website.
3. I was satisfied with my shopping experience at the site.
4. I don't like the environment of the site.
5. I would avoid looking around or explore the environment of the site.
6. Given a choice, I would probably not go back to the site.
7. I like the environment of the site.
8. I might end up spending more money than I originally set out to spend.
9. I would recommend this site to other people.

ARTS AND HUMANITIES

Marginalisation and Traumatic effects of Cancer: A Study of *The Kiss of Life* by Emraan Hashmi

Sumit Garg* and Sushil Kumar**

ABSTRACT

Cancer is a name which has haunted all of us for ages. The very utterance of this word creates shiver in the body. Any literary text on cancer does not provide any cure or remedy for the disease as physical science can but through the reading of Emraan Hashmi's The Kiss of Life one can understand the marginalisation one has to face and the relentless trauma one has to undergo. The paper is an attempt to understand how Cancer causes marginalization and trauma in the life of an individual as well as the family of the individual suffering with cancer in Emraan Hashmi's semi-autobiography The Kiss of Life.

Keywords: cancer, literature, marginalisation, trauma

Introduction

Emraan Hashmi is a popular Bollywood actor. With the three filmfare awards he is acknowledged as the highly paid and successful actor. In 2014, Emraan had to suffer because his son, Ayaan, was diagnosed with cancer which changed his entire outlook towards life. This pain and suffering of Ayaan and the whole family is represented in *The Kiss of Life*. However, any literary text on cancer does not provide any cure or remedy for the disease as physical science can but through this text one can understand the marginalisation one has to face and the relentless trauma one has to undergo. The paper is an attempt to understand how Cancer causes marginalisation and trauma in the life of an individual as well as the family of the individual suffering with cancer through Emraan Hashmi's semi-autobiography *The Kiss of Life*.

Cancer is a name which has haunted all of us for ages. The very utterance of this word creates shiver in the body. People all over the world are suffering and dying because of this dreaded disease. According to WHO, "Cancer is a generic term for a large group of diseases that can affect any part of the body..." "One defining feature of cancer is the rapid creation of abnormal cells that grow beyond their usual boundaries, and which can then invade adjoining parts of the body and spread to other organs..." ("Cancer"). Cancer is not a new disease. The word cancer came from a Greek word karkinos to describe carcinoma tumors by a physician Hippocrates (460-370 B.C). The world's oldest recorded case of breast cancer hails from ancient "Egypt in 1500 BC" and it was recorded that there was no treatment for the cancer, only palliative treatment (Sudhkar).

* Assistant Professor in English, Punjabi University College, Ghudda, Bathinda, Punjab, India

** Assistant Professor in English, YCOE, Punjabi University Campus, Talwandi Sabo, Bathinda, Punjab, India

Cancer was initially a body disease, then a tissue disease, and finally became a cell nucleus disease due to the disordered multiplication of cells. Now it has also taken the shape of a psycho-social disease apart from being a physiological one. Actually “we are misled by profit hungry multinationals and coaxed into believing that some things are good for us” (Hashmi and Siddiqi 112). From the beginning of the 20th century, the number of cancer centers increased in Europe and as a result treatments became more individual and efficient for each patient. A new industry was born catering to the needs of cancer patients but there is the flip side of the coin too. The war against cancer has already been lost. Data say that cancer industry is probably the most prosperous industry in the United States (We Lost the War on Cancer 125). Emraan puts it “Cancer is where the money lies. It’s a business. And finding a cure could probably mean losing out billions of dollars” (Hashmi and Siddiqi 116). The question that impinges upon the mind is whether the war against cancer is being won or the pharmaceutical companies indulged in providing costly treatments for cancer are being fed. Another thing which is important to note here is that globally capitalism has enveloped the whole market where the sole motto is to keep the market intact in order to earn profit. In his essay “Is Capitalism a Disease? The Crisis in U.S. Public Health”, Levin points out the advent of so many ills along with this notion (13). It seems the increase in the number of cancer patients is one such outcome.

Hashmi mentions that “the number of global cancer deaths by 2030 is estimated to be a whopping 11.5 million... [m]ore than 50 per cent of all cancers occur in developing countries” (143). The whole world is suffering with this disease and India is no exception. The Indian Council of Medical Research, in its 2016 report said that the total number of new cancer cases is expected to be around 14.5 lakh and the figure is likely to reach near 17.3 lakh by 2020. These facts are quite alarming but if one penetrates a bit more Punjab, which was considered as the food bowl of India has crossed the national average in terms of number of cancer patients, is termed as the cancer capital of India. “All cancers are higher than average in Punjab, especially kidney, urinary, bladder and breast cancers....” (144). This, of course, is in consonance with the figures stated by Jyotsna in her article on “Down to Earth” which states that “there are at least 90 cancer patients for every 100,000 population of Punjab against the national average of 80 for every 100,000 population.”

There has always been a deep chord between literature and disease. According to Toombs (1992), Literature and medicine have been interwoven so profusely extending from *The Magic Mountain* of Thomas Mann to the philosophical writings of K. Toombs, suffering from multiple sclerosis (17). What a disease does to a person is that it really shakes the roots of the existence of the person which needs to be recomposed. Of course, the doctor cures and tries to restore the physical health but the patient needs to be more in a state where the psychological battle with the disease is to be won. Here comes the role of literature as according to Donohoe and Danielson (2004), “Literature’s power lies in its ability to call up and articulate feelings and evoke vicarious experience.” Scott (2014) elaborates that physicians all over the world have almost accepted that special skills are required to read the psychology of the person suffering with disease. And these skills in a way, “fall under the domain of literature which has a long tradition in the creation of subjects, notably in those texts where this creation is part of the narrative” (4).

Obviously, a piece of literature has nothing to do with the curing of the patient in the literal sense of the term but it provides the vitality to fight with the disease psychologically. Reading about a person who has fought with a dreaded disease like cancer gives a kind of boost. It acts as a therapy which sometimes proves more effective than the physiological treatment of the disease. Peterson (1976) has put forth the representation of "brain fever" in the 19th century literature in the works such as *Wuthering Heights* (447). The writers of the Modern age also pursued the ruts and reconnoitered the relationship between disease and writing. Woolf (1930) writes, "Considering how common illness is, how tremendous the spiritual change that it brings, how astonishing, when the lights of health go down, the undiscovered countries that are then disclosed... it becomes strange indeed that illness has not taken its place with love and battle and jealousy among the prime themes of literature" (193).

A lot has been written on the theme of cancer in order to have psychological as well as therapeutic effect on readers. Armstrong's (2001) *It's Not About the Bike: My Journey Back to Life* is an inspiring journey of world-class hero Lance Armstrong, from the dark night of advanced testicular cancer through his dramatic victory in the 1999 Tour de France, and beyond. Frank (2002) in his *At the will of the body: Reflections on illness* declares "Illness as an opportunity, though a dangerous one. To seize this opportunity, I need to remain with illness a little longer and share what I have learned through it..." Yuvraj Singh (2013) in his *The Test of My Life from Cricket to Cancer and Back* describes his battle with the dreaded disease and how he was able to overcome this traumatic phase in his life. The cricketer had seen the world crumbling before him as he dealt with chemotherapy. Scott's (2015) *Every Day I Fight* is both a labour of love and a love letter to life itself. Struck by appendiceal cancer in 2007, Stuart battled this disease with an unimaginable tenacity and vigour. He wanted to be there for his daughters not simply as their dad, but as an immutable example of determination. Sager (2016) in *Living Out Loud*, shares incredible stories from his remarkable career and chronicles his heroic battle of fighting against leukemia. Hashmi and Siddiqi (2013) in *The Kiss of life* have given the record of the sufferings of the parents of a four year old kid who is having Wilms' tumour. What differentiates this work from others is its story line in which the actual sufferer Ayaan, son of Emraan Hashmi even does not know a bit about cancer but on the other side the parents are in a state of trauma and are marginalised due to this disease.

Marginalisation: A Multilayered phenomenon

A person who is related with research or follows social media is aware of the term 'marginalisation' but the meaning of the term is used generally in singular sense, that is social marginalisation. To be marginalised is to be forced to occupy the sides or fringes and thus not be at the centre of things. In the social environment, groups of people or communities have the experience of being excluded. Their marginalisation can be because they speak a different language, follow different customs or belong to a different religious group from the majority community. They may also feel marginalised because they are poor, considered to be of 'low' social status and viewed as being less human than others. Sometimes, marginalised groups are viewed with hostility and fear. This sense of difference and exclusion leads to communities not having access to resources and opportunities and in their inability to assert their rights. They experience a sense of disadvantage and powerlessness vis-a-vis more

powerful. Avadesh Singh states that marginalisation is “[t]he temporary state of having being put aside of living in relative isolation, at the edge of system (cultural, social, political or economic), in mind, when one excludes certain domains or a phenomenon from one's thinking because they don't correspond to the main-stream philosophy” (45). Karl Marx accounts marginalisation or social exclusion with a materialistic approach. According to him, marginalisation stems from the control of means of production. The modern society has only two classes of people: the bourgeoisie and the proletariat. The bourgeoisie are the owners of the means of production: the factories, businesses, and equipment needed to produce wealth. The proletariats are the workers. The bourgeoisie in capitalist societies exploit workers, that is proletariats. Over a period of time bourgeoisie are becoming richer and the proletariat, on the other hand, are becoming poorer and thus exploited. This causes their marginalisation on economic basis. In “Communist Manifesto”, Marx describes the condition of the labourers as follows: “The modern labourer ..., instead of rising with the process of industry, sinks deeper and deeper below the conditions of existence of his own class. He becomes a pauper, and pauperism develops more rapidly than population and wealth” (12). But marginalisation is seldom experienced on one sphere. Economic, social, cultural and political factors work together to make certain groups in society feel marginalised. It may be considered on the basis of illness also which means that the people who do not fall under the category of normal health can be called the marginalised ones. But among these there are such cases that are treated very carefully and are looked after more than the normal people. Though this seems positive yet they are secluded, isolated and in a way alienated from the mainstream. The practices of excluding some members of society, denying them the privilege of leading a life equivalent to the rest and suppressing them under the burden of an oppressive identity has always been prevalent in society. According to Foucault, “In the Middle ages, exclusion hit the leper, the heretic. Classical culture excluded by means of the General Hospital, the Zuchthaus, the Workhouse, all institutions which were derived from the leper colony. [He] wanted to describe the modification of a structure of exclusion” (9). He further argues “Once leprosy had gone... these structures still remained. The game of exclusion would be played again, often in these same places, in an oddly similar fashion two or three centuries later. The role of the leper was to be played by the poor and by the vagrant, by prisoners and by the 'alienated' and the sort of salvation at stake for both parties in this game of exclusion is the matter of this study. The forms this exclusion took would continue, in a radically different culture and with a new meaning, but remaining essentially the major form of a rigorous division, at the same time social exclusion...” (2006). Cancer causes such marginalisation and in a way it can be termed as the multiple marginalisations where the person suffering with the disease cannot have access to the fundamentals in life. Even the person who is economically well off has to pay high price as the disease takes away the normal life of the person and push him to the marginalised category where he has to suffer not only economically but also physically, socially and psychologically. Sometimes a person recovers well from the disease but it takes him a lifetime to erase the traumatic experiences of the treatment like chemotherapy, surgery, etc., in case of cancer.

Another aspect which is to be taken care of is the marginalisation on the basis of the availability of the treatment of the disease, especially in case of cancer. What is emphasized here is that the normal treatment which is generally available, that is chemotherapy and the medicines related to it are not the only treatment in the market rather these are made the only treatment. There are also more successful and economical ways of dealing with the dreaded disease. Unethical practices are being followed and the other treatment which may be, so to say, economical and less time consuming is relegated into the background in order to feed the big fat bellies of the pharmaceutical companies who manufacture the medicines for the disease and they do not want to decrease their profits. There is, undoubtedly, unholy nexus of the greedy politicians and pharmaceutical corporate houses which is making it more and more intricate problem the solution of which is distant utopia. The reason behind seems clear that cancer industry does not want to remove roots of the cancer as it will prove to be a threat to their own existence. After all it is market where gains are more important than the life of a person and nobody can dispense with it.

Moreover, a person suffering with the disease has to fight with it both physiologically and psychologically. At times he feels low and socially unacceptable. Nevertheless a continuous battle is to be fought both outside and inside. The battle outside which is strenuous seems comparatively easy going to that of the battle inside which shatters the person into pieces. There are so many after effects of the treatment of cancer which attack the patient psychologically like hair loss, reshaping of the body and the pain suffered during the treatment. Here comes the role of another industry: the psychiatry and asylums. Psychological counseling is quite a new term to all of us which is rather good way to vomit the evils or problems out of the brain of a person. But the medicines related to the psychiatry are increasing day by day without the assurance of making a person psychologically fit. The patient becomes habitual of the drugs which are given during the psychological treatment of a patient apart from its side effects.

Marginalisation and trauma: A narrative of an unexpected journey

Ayaan, the four year old son of Emraan Hashmi was detected second stage Wilms' tumour in January 2014. Fond of fast food like pizza, Ayaan accompanied his parents to a Hotel where all of a sudden his mother, Parveen, saw her son urinating blood. The life came to a standstill for the parents but the kid, on the other side, "was jovial, as though nothing had happened" (Hashmi and Siddiqi, 17). Even while going for the treatment to Canada he caught the sight of Pizza at the airport and felt like having it but like any normal child he could not have it. The sight of blood in the urine creates stir in the life of the parents and they start searching for the causes and while surfing through the Google one of the reasons they hypothesized about was cancer. But in their heart of hearts they urged their apprehensions to become false as they prayed to God "...[d]on't let this be cancer" (28). The very threat or the apprehension of the disease creates the trauma in the life of the family members. "I decided to distract myself... I headed to the gym... It didn't do me any good... There was no running away from this thought" (28). The apprehensions came to be true as it was cancer rather "[a] rare cancer of the kidneys that primarily affects children" (29). It was actually Wilms' tumour named after a German doctor, Max Wilms, who wrote one of the first medical articles about the disease in 1899. The

kid was to be operated. The whole world came to a standstill and Hashmi started feeling alienated from the whole world. Finding refuge in the family everything else seemed a different world with whom he did not identify: "The rest of the world seemed happy to go about their routine. I suddenly began to dislike everyone and everything" (32).

Though the operation was successful yet the doctors had to remove the kidney as it was enveloped by the tumour. Resultantly Ayaan had to undergo multiple cycles of chemotherapy as "in a bid to kill cancer, often there is collateral damage" (44). In that case even the healing is not healing it is a kind of damage. Apart from that the drug which was there as the cure for cancer in the form of chemotherapy had side effects like hair loss, constipation, numbness, pain, mouth ulcers, etc., which is enough to create trauma for the patient as well as his family members. Emraan's life started moving around medicines and hospitals as if no other thing in the world existed. After the surgery Ayaan had to undergo chemotherapy in numerous sittings which took around six months. Besides, Emraan and his family were always haunted by cancer and they used to surround themselves with the literature containing the cure for cancer: "I read almost everything- articles and literature- that there was on the Wilms' tumour..." (45). The family had to move to another country for the better treatment of their kid as so many facilities were not available in India and even if they were available the quality was lacking. This act of taking Ayaan to Canada for the treatment made him marginalised as he had to spend a whole lot of money and surrounded by unfamiliar people. Here Emraan Hashmi is affluent enough to afford the expenses of the treatment yet he had to move back to India leaving the treatment of his son Ayaan in the hands of his wife Parveen in order to complete his pending films so that the cost of the treatment could be met: "I could not walk out of the films... I [was] to take Ayaan abroad for his treatment, that would've cost us a lot of money too" (114).

Before going to Canada Ayaan had to undergo a surgery and one chemo session in India. During that time Emraan witnessed lots of children lying on the floor after their chemo sessions as their parents were not rich enough to pay the heavy cost of treatment which represents the marginalisation as "[t]he number of global deaths by 2030 is estimated to be a whopping 11.5 million" and the major cause is economic problems (143). On one hand they were troubled by their poverty and on the other hand they had to wage a war against cancer. Any normal person is not paid attention generally but when a person falls sick he attracts the attention of the whole family and friends as well. The person suffering sometimes does not know how to respond to and he feels being away from the normal and this also seems a sort of marginalisation. Ayaan, suffering with cancer, could not play like a normal child; was always under a strict vigil; had to apply the mask all the time to avoid germ and as such felt marginalised during the treatment. "Stop fidgeting and keep the mask on... he kept trying to pull off the mask..." (62). Emraan took Ayaan to Canada by telling a lie that they were going on another vacation but Ayaan felt cheated when he had to visit the hospital and wear the hospital gown. It was a sort of trauma revisited: "A sense of déjà vu struck him once he was wheeled into the hospital room" (72). The only refuge for Ayaan in this traumatic situation was the fictional character of Iron Man which he, like almost every kid, thought to be real. And the refuge for Emraan was cinema where he could be away from his own self to play so many different characters.

A kid is generally full of life and energy, always moving here and there and so was Ayaan but cancer ruined his health. Resultantly he could not move like a normal kid. Always being protected and cared for attitude was ruining him psychologically as Emraan mentions “I was accustomed to seeing my kid running around, and this restricted him” (76). The imprints of chemo treatment in Canada were also too deep in the brain of Emraan that it “still echo in [his] head when [he] think[s] about it” (73). They all were waiting for the bad dream to end. Emraan was suffering from insomnia, and if ever he was able to get some sleep, nightmares of cancer haunted him. “It was yet another nightmare about a tumour that had caused [him] to wake up in the middle of night. On one side his son was badly hit with cancer and on the other side he was to move away from the family in order to earn money but the pain of Ayaan becomes obvious when he rejects the proposal of his father of bringing some gifts on his return and says “I want you back here, papa. Not the gifts” (86). Even the TV show which he liked and watched at that time was related to cancer which shows how psychologically traumatized he was. His own health started deteriorating as Emraan was working overtime in order to avoid the thoughts of cancer and to meet the expenses of cancer.

Undoubtedly a disease like cancer plays havoc in the life of a person and his family, who suffer a lot on physical, economic, social and psychological grounds because of it. But during the time of struggle with the disease sometimes it brings one closer to one's loved ones. A special attention is being given to the person suffering with the disease but that is what makes the person marginalised. “My family had got the news after my quick call... Everyone had come home dropping everything...” (31). Down with the disease, at first instance a person surrenders, curses God, breaks down, asks various questions regarding his own sufferings but after that finding no solution gets ready to face the circumstances without thinking about the consequences as Emraan Hashmi “... switched into battle mode... made a million phone calls and resolved to do everything that it would take to save Ayaan's life” (45). Besides, so many film actors came for his support. The persons who had already suffered with the disease could identify and empathize with the sufferer and his family. But this is a sort of overprotection which is also a form of marginalisation. Cancer sufferer and his family become curious regarding all kinds of treatment and other therapies as Hashmi says, “I wanted to know everything that existed about this illness...” (49)..

In *The Kiss of Life*, Ayaan is taken to the Sick Kids hospital in Canada for chemo and the hospital was just like a “ten storey mall” where the disease is undoubtedly cured but the whole setup was of a market rather than any hospital” (61). For the treatment the most important thing which was asked for was money though the dealing was really nice: “They asked me... details regarding the payment of the treatment” (68). Obviously Emraan could pay the money and that is why he took his son to Canada but most of the people in India who are suffering with cancer are not able to even bear the cost of medicine what to think of any sort of treatment outside the country.

Conclusion

To conclude, it can be said that the commercialization of everything has converted the big world into a market having only the profit motive where the disease is also being sold and the patient is merely seen as a consumer and is marginalised not only on economic basis but also on social,

psychological and physiological basis. In order to sell a disease one needs to keep it intact so that the market related to it should flourish. In this blind race man is just a puppet as a person suffering with the disease will try harder to be cured without considering anything else. It was an alarming sign for the society but it is good enough for the cancer industry which keeps on growing. Emraan Hashmi has aptly pointed out the abhorrent face of the corporate houses and pharmaceutical industry which is actually causing marginalisation for a common man suffering from this disease. Though he has not mentioned any of the causes of this disease in the work which could have been helpful in exploring this aspect of the illness yet it seems that the mental state of Hashmi leads him to just focus on cure rather than on reasons so he is silent on the ecological reasons of cancer like the use of pesticides, industrial waste, etc. The cognition domain is delimited by the trauma and marginalisation.

References

- Armstrong, Lance. *It's Not About the Bike: My Journey Back to Life*. Yellow Jersey Press, 2001.
- Donohoe, Martin, and Susan Danielson. "A Community based approach to the medical humanities." *Research Gate*, Mar. 2004, [Researchgate.net/publication/8779726_A_community-based_approach_to_the_medical_humanities/](https://www.researchgate.net/publication/8779726_A_community-based_approach_to_the_medical_humanities/).
- Foucault, Michel. *History of Madness*. Translated by Jonathan Murphy and Jean Khalfa Routledge, 2006.
- Lotringer, Sylvere. Foucault live: (Interviews, 196184) Michel Foucault. Translated by John Johnston, Semiotext(e) Foreign Agents Series, 1996.
- Frank, Arthur W. *At the Will of the Body: Reflections on Illness*. Mariner Books, 2002.
- Hashmi, Emraan, and Bilal Siddiqi. *The Kiss of Life*. Penguin Books, 2016.
- Levins, Richard. "Is Capitalism a disease? The crisis in U.S. Public Health." *Monthly Review*, vol. 52, no. 4, Sept. 2000, pp. 8-33.
- Marx, Karl and Friedrich Engels. *The Communist Manifesto*. Harper Collins Publishers, 2014.
- Peterson, A. C. "Brain fever in 19th century literature: fact and fiction." *Victorian Studies*, vol. 19, no.4, June 1976, pp 445-64.
- Sager, Craig et al. *Living Out Loud: Sports, Cancer, and the Things Worth Fighting For*. Flatiron Books, 2016.
- Scott, P Anne. "The relationship between the arts and medicine." *Journal of Medical Ethics*, vol. 26, no. 1, 4 June 2014, pp 3-8.
- Scott, Stuart, and Larry Platt. *Every Day I fight: Making a Difference, Kicking Cancer's Ass*. Blue Rider Press, 2015.

- Singh, Avadesh K. *Indian English Literature: Marginalised Voices*. New Delhi: Creative Books, 2003.
- Singh, Jyotsna. "Punjab, cancer capital of India." *Down to Earth*, 2 Feb. 2013, [downtoearth.org. in /news/punjab-cancer-capital-of-india-40255/](http://downtoearth.org.in/news/punjab-cancer-capital-of-india-40255/).
- Singh, Yuvraj. *The Test of My Life from Cricket to Cancer and Back*. Random House India/ Ebury Press, 2013.
- Sudhakar, Akullapa. "History of Cancer, Ancient and Modern Treatment Methods." *Journal of Cancer Science and Therapy*, vol. 1, no. 2, 24 Aug 2010, pp 1-4.
- Thomas, John P. *We Lost the War on Cancer- Review of Alternate Cancer Therapies*. edited by Brian Shulhavy, Sophia Media, 2014, p. 125.
- Toombs, S. Kay. *The Meaning of Illness*. Springer Netherland, 1992.
- Woolf, Virginia. "On Being Ill." *Collected Essays*, The Hogarth Press, 1930, pp. 193-94.
- "Cancer." *World Health Organization*. Feb. 2018, who.int/mediacentre/factsheets/fs297/en/.
- "Over 17 lakh new cancer cases in India by 2020." ICMR. 19 May 2016, icmr.nic.in/icmrsql/archive/2016/7.pdf.

Buddhist Education and the Present Scenario In the Indian University System

Meenu Verma*

ABSTRACT

In the Indian culture knowledge, learning or education has been considered as the means to liberation or emancipation 'Sā vidyā yā vimuktaye'. Buddhist philosophy and learning kept up this notion intact, which is evident from the very life of Siddhartha Gautama. His enlightenment was not merely a knowledge, but deliverance for all mankind. The Buddha decided to share his knowledge with others so that they could also adopt and opt the perfect or right kind of knowledge that leads to emancipation (Nibbāna). Even during the lifetime of the Buddha, his followers had developed their own different choices of subjects such as Vinaya, Suttanta, Abhidhamma, Mātika etc., on the basis of which different specializations of Buddhist education developed in the following centuries like Vinayadhara, Suttantadhara, Abhidhammadhara, Mātikadhara and so on. Prominent seats of Buddhist learning developed during the 4th - 5th Centuries and even later at Nālandā, Odantapurī, Vikramaśīla (also called Vikramaśilā), Jagaddala, Valabhī, Jayendra Vihāra etc. These institutions provided education not only on the Buddhist philosophy, but various secular subjects like Astronomy, Mathematics, and Medicine etc. However, these institutions fell prey to the foreign invasions and got fully destroyed with the decline of Buddhism in general. The Government of India, after the Indian independence realized the importance of Buddhist learning and established various teaching and research institutions in different places like Nālandā, Varanasi, Bodh Gaya, Sarnath, Nagarjuna Nagar, Mumbai, Nagpur, Delhi, Jammu, Leh and so on which gave a boost to Buddhist learning and initiated the process of research on various aspects of Buddhism. Prior to that Calcutta University, under the leadership of Sir Ashutosh Mukherjee had already established India's First Department of Pali in 1906. The latest example in this direction is the foundation of the Sanchi University of Buddhist - Indic Studies. All these Universities, despite laying emphasis on various aspects of Buddhist learning, have the common goal of highlighting Buddhist Studies and its value based education. Thus, in this regard a major shift or great transition can be seen in the system of Buddhist education in terms of not only just preserving the ancient methods of learning but also in terms of maintaining the physical hardships or adversities. Therefore, in this paper an effort has been made to highlight the past and the current scenario of Buddhist Education in the Indian Academics.

Keywords: Knowledge, Buddhist Education: the past and current scenario

Introduction

The Indian knowledge (vidyā) or education has been considered as the powerful means to liberation or emancipation- 'Sā vidyā yā vimuktaye'. Buddhist philosophy and learning also kept this

* Research Scholar, Department of Buddhist Studies, University of Jammu, Jammu, India

notion intact, which is evident from the very life of Siddhārtha Gautama. His Enlightenment was not merely a knowledge, but deliverance as well. In the beginning, the Buddha was not willing to share his knowledge with others apprehending that the people might not be able to understand the profundity of his deep teaching, as his teaching leads one to the opposite direction of worldliness, whereas common mass is engrossed with worldly pleasure, sensory love and lust. However, on pursuasion of Sahampati Brahma, he agreed to share his knowledge with others so that they could adopt and opt the same path leading to Nibbāna. The education given by the Buddha was not merely an ordinary education, but education of life indeed. He educated the people to lead a pure, pious and noble life; his knowledge and teachings has simplified the paradoxes of human life in this world. As stated by Max Müller, "To my mind, Buddhism has always seemed to be, not a new religion, but a natural development of the Indian mind in its various manifestations, religious, philosophical, social and political."

Since the time of the Vedas, there has been ample of examples laid down by several Mahasiddhas such as the Brahma, Visnu, and the Puranas. Later on, with the expansion in thought, the two great epics 'The Mahabharata' and 'Ramayana' have remained as the source or the pillar of moral education throughout the ages. However, after some time with the gradual maturation of knowledge in the human mind, we can see a sharp rise or expansion in the human mind through several traditions such as Śāḍ Darshan (Orthodox class) and heterodox class Buddhist and Cārvāka. All these schools of tradition have only one common and significant goal of permanent emancipation from this suffering world. At the same time, to some extent there are some contradictions or contradictory statements regarding each other which can be seen as the major thought of evolution in the history of mankind. During that time the knowledge and the unparalleled wisdom given by Gautama Buddha was very much appreciated by both the traditions (Sanātana and Buddhist) wholeheartedly. However, it was only after the Mahāparinirvāna of the Buddha that his philosophies started disseminated in the form of Buddhist education.

Buddhist Education: The Past Scenario

In the past and it continues in the present, the monasteries were the chief centers of learning. The first step in Buddhist initiation is called 'Pabbajja' or 'going forth' as admission to the monastery is thrown open to all the people irrespective of caste and creed. In the case of a layman under twenty years of age seeking admission to the Order, he approaches the vihāra of his choice with the yellow robes in his hands and presented himself before an elder of the monastery for initiation. The elder then invests him with the yellow robe and calls upon him to take the following Oath of Three Refuges (Saraṇattaya) three times: "I take refuge in the Buddha. I take refuge in the Dhamma. I take refuge in the Order." On being admitted, the individual is called Sāmaṇera and the following Ten Commandments are administered to him (the dasasikkhāpadāni), viz. abstinence from (1) taking life, (2) taking what is not duly given, (3) sexual misconduct, (4) telling a lie, (5) intoxicating drinks (arrack etc.) (6) Eating at an improper time, (7) dancing and singing, (8) Using garlands, scents, ornaments etc., (9) Use of a high or large couch or seat, and (10) receiving gold or silver. Then the ceremony is over, and the novice is committed to the care of his elder or preceptor who brings him up till he is fit for higher ordination.

The preliminary ordination of pabbajjā inaugurates the period of novitiate which is ended by the

final ordination of the Upasampadā, the arrival at the full status of monkhood or a Bhikṣu, a full-fledged member of the Order. After the pabbajjā ceremony, education continues usually for four to five years. After this the Sāmaṇera has to undergo the Upasampadā ceremony. The Upasampadā ceremony is performed at the age of 20. In addition to this, the teachers are highly qualified and also responsible for physical, mental, spiritual and moral development of the students.

In the earlier times, prominent seats of Buddhist learning developed during the 4th-5th Centuries and even later at Nalanda, Odantapurī, Vikramaśīla (also called Vikramaśilā), Jagaddala, Valabhī, Jayendra Vihāra etc. These institutions provided education not only on Buddhist philosophy but also on secular subjects like Astronomy, Mathematics, Medicine etc. The greatest contribution of Buddhism to Indian educational system was the establishment of a large number of corporate educational institutions some of which may easily be called 'Universities of that Period'. The major development can be seen during the fifth-sixth centuries CE when Nālandā monastery emerged as a University in the eastern India.

Nalanda was the most famous and celebrated Buddhist center of learning in ancient India. It was the name of an ancient village which Cunningham identified with modern Baragaon, 7 miles north of Rajgir in Bihar and there flourished the Nalanda Mahāvihāra. According to Jain and Buddhist texts, Nalanda is termed as bāharika or hamlet which is situated on the outskirts of Rajgir (ancient Rājagṛha). It has also been mentioned in the Buddhist scriptures which refer to a Nalanda village near Rājagṛha with a Pāvārika Mango Park at the Buddha's time. Scholars have observed that the monasteries were founded between the visit of Fa-Hien and Hiuen-Tsang. Fa-Hien visited Nalanda in c. 410 CE but he did not refer to its educational importance. According to him, Nalanda was the birth place of the great disciple of the Buddha Sariputta. Even today there exists a small hamlet in his memory near Baragaon. He called Nalanda as 'the village of Nalo' where he saw a tower erected on the spot where Sariputta attained Nirvāṇa. It was not so prosperous during Fa-Hien's visit, but by the time of Hiuen-Tsang (633 CE). Thus Nalanda rapidly rose as a university of international repute because of the patronage extended to it by a number of Gupta emperors. Hiuen-Tsang was a learned Mahāyānist monk who has given a detailed account of educational establishments, particularly Nalanda, where he stayed and studied Buddhism during the reign of Harṣa.

The conditions of admission to Nalanda show that it was run as an institution of higher learning or post-graduate studies. It became famous on account of its galaxy of well-versed professors and the high standard of teaching. The staff of Nalanda University had great thinkers such as Nāgārjuna, Āryadeva, Vasubandhu, Asaṅga, Sthiramati, Dharmapāla, Śīlabhadra, Śāntideva, Padmasambhava etc. The institution was noted for its specialization in the last stages of a University education. Thus, it helps the students in the solution of their doubts, and training in the arts of disputation (tarka-śāstra) and public speech. Admission rules were strict and those who were deeply versed in old and modern learning could get admission. Students came from all parts of India and even distant countries like Tibet, Japan, China, Korea etc., to study in this University. There were more than 3,000 monks in this University when I-tsing came to Nalanda to study there (672 CE). There were about a thousand competent teachers to look after the education of 10,000 monks. Out of these monks, there were a thousand who could explain thirty collections of sūtras, and perhaps ten who could explain fifty collections. Teaching at the Nalanda Mahāvihāra was systematic and well organized and therefore, it was possible to give personal attention to each student there. Nalanda University had a big library and Arts and Humanities

its curriculum was comprehensive. This University belonged to Mahāyāna Buddhism but the theories of Theravāda school were also taught. Courses of study offered by the Nalanda University covered a wide range, almost the entire circle of knowledge available at that time. They were drawn from the different fields of learning, Brahmanical and Buddhist, sacred and secular, philosophical and practical, sciences and arts. Students at Nalanda studied the works belonging to the eighteen sects that included the works on Vedas and some other works such as Hetuvidyā, Śabdavidyā, Chikitsāvidyā, works on Magic and Atharvaveda, the Sāṅkhya etc. Nalanda was indeed a Buddhist centre of learning in all its branches and subjects like Sanātana scriptures, Astrology, Astronomy, Grammar, and Medicine etc., were also taught there. The fatal invasion by Bakhtiyar Khilji destroyed the Nalanda University towards the end of the 12th century.

Odantapurī is also known as Uḍyantapurī, Uḍantapurī, Odantapura or Uḍḍantapura was a Buddhist Vihāra in Bihar, India. Though Odantapurī had a galaxy of highly qualified and learned teachers with wider knowledge, but it did not become famous as other institutions like Nalanda, Vikramaśīla. It is considered as the second oldest University of ancient India and was situated at the modern Biharsharif in Magadha. This University had existed long before the Pāla Kings came into power in Magadha. The Pāla Kings looked after the University and also gave the financial assistance to this Mahāvihāra. Later this University was supported by King Dharmapāla of Pāla Dynasty in Magadha in the 8th century. These Kings expanded the University by endowing it with a good Library of Brahmanical and Buddhist works. This university remained the premier centre of Vajrayāna Buddhism as it was one of the greatest seats of Buddhist learning after Nalanda Mahāvihāra. There were about 12,000 students who studied there, according to Tibetan records. A number of monasteries also grew up during the Pāla period in ancient Bengal and Tibet. The University was destroyed by Ali Bakhtiyar Khilji around 1193.

Vikramaśīla (also known as Vikramaśīlā) monastery was a famous centre of international learning for more than four centuries. This University was established by King Dharmapāla in the 8th Century CE. King Dharmapāla founded Śrī Vikramaśīla Vihāra on a suitable site, a hillock on the bank of Ganges and in Northern Magadha. It was the greatest and the most famous University like Nalanda which was at its peak period under the patronage of Pāla rulers. Like Nalanda, it was also a monastery and a Buddhist seat of learning. The Vihāra was constructed after a good design and was surrounded by a strong wall. At the centre was erected a temple adorned with Mahābodhi images. The teaching was controlled by a Board of eminent teachers and the Board of Vikramaśīlā also managed the matters of Nalanda. Further King Dharmapāla became the common head of these two famous universities viz. Nalanda and Vikramaśīla who brought out co-ordination of work and management between them.

The continuing tradition of high scholarship that was maintained at Vikramaśīlā throughout its history deserves admiration. The most famous in the galaxy of Vikramaśīlā scholars was undoubtedly Dīpaṅkara Śrījāna who lived in the 11th century CE. He was a renowned scholar who became the head of the University of Vikramaśīla during 1034-38 CE after completing his education in Odantapurī. He was also known as Ācārya Atiśa (Tibetan name). He was one of the greatest Indian scholars who worked as a missionary in foreign countries. He was a master of both Theravāda and Mahāyāna Buddhism and also of Vaiśeṣika and Tantras. He translated seventy-two Sanskrit works and also more than 200 works were ascribed to him mostly on the Vajrayāna teachings. Some other

Vikramaśīla scholars working in Tibet and writing on Tibet are Jñānapāda, Vairocana, Jitāri, Prajñākaramati, Ratnākara, Jñāna Śrī, Ratnavajra, Ratnakīrti, Mañjuśrī, Dharmakīrti etc. In the 12th century there were 3,000 monk scholars at Vikramaśīla. The administrative management of the University was presided over by the Chief-Abbot. Grammar, logic, metaphysics, tantras and ritualism were the main subjects taught at the University. It was destroyed by Muslim invaders towards the end of the 12th Century.

The Buddhist Pāla Kings were patrons of learning. King Rāmapāla who reigned from 1084 to 1130 CE built a new capital for his Kingdom at the junction of the Ganga and one of its deltaic tributaries, the Karatoa, and christened it Rāmavati. There he established a Buddhist University called Jagaddala. It functioned for barely a century and a half and was swept away by the violence of Muslim invasion of Bihar. However, it made substantial contributions to learning through its scholars who made it famous through their writings. Some of its famous scholars were Vibhūticandra, Dānaśīla, Śubhakarā, Mokṣhākaragupta etc. Vibhūticandra was a great Tibetan scholar and translated many Sanskrit works into Tibetan and bore the title of 'Mahāpaṇḍita'. Dānaśīla also won several titles like Paṇḍita, Mahāpaṇḍita, Upādhyāya and Ācārya for his profound knowledge of both Tibetan and Sanskrit. Śubhakarā is said to have been the guru of Śākyaśrī and composed a Sanskrit work "Siddhaika-vīra-tantraṭīka" which was later translated into Tibetan. Mokṣhākaragupta was a master of Logic on which he wrote the Sanskrit work "Tarka-bhāṣā" which was translated into Tibetan and also bore the title of Bhikṣu and Mahāpaṇḍita.

Nālandā had its rival University on the western side of India in Gujarat at Valabhī which was the capital of Maitraka Kings (475-775 CE). It was a Buddhist monastery and served as a centre of religious learning. The University specialized in many branches of learning such as Arthaśāstra, law etc. Its first Vihāra was founded by Princess Duḍḍā, the niece of Dhruva I.

The Jayendra Vihāra of Kashmir was also an important centre of Buddhist learning. It attracted such famous scholars as Kumārajīva and Yuan Chwang who came here to study and a large number of scholars went from here to Tibet, China and Central Asia for the propagation of Buddhism. However, these institutions fell prey to the foreign invasions and got fully eliminated with the decline of Buddhism in general.

Buddhist Education: The Current Scenario

The Government of India, after the Independence realized the importance of Buddhist learning and established various teaching and research institutions at different places viz. Nālandā, Varanasi, Bodhgaya, Sarnath, Nagarjuna Nagar, Mumbai, Nagpur, Delhi, Jammu, Leh etc., which gave a boost to Buddhist learning and initiated the process of research on various aspects of Buddhism. Prior to that Calcutta University, under the leadership of Sir Ashutosh Mukerjee had already established India's First Department of Pali in 1906. The latest example in this direction is the foundation of the Sanchi University of Buddhist-Indic Studies, Barla, Madhya Pradesh. It is pertinent to mention here that the University of Delhi was the first University in India to establish the Department of Buddhist Studies in 1957. In addition to this, at present there are various recognized institutions and Universities in India, where students can study the teachings of Buddhism in a well explained manner by renowned and outstanding scholars of Buddhist Studies. Some of the most significant institutions are Dr. Bhadant Anand Kausalyayan Centre for Buddhist Studies, Mahatma Gandhi International Arts and Humanities

Hindi University, Wardha, Maharashtra; Department of Pali and Buddhist Studies, Banaras Hindu University (BHU), Varanasi; Nava Nalanda Mahavihara, Nalanda, Bihar; Institute of Buddhist Dialectics, Dharmasala; Department of Buddhist Studies, Sathaye College, Mumbai University; Gautam Buddha University (School of Buddhist Studies and Civilization), Greater Noida; Magadha University, Bihar; Department of Buddhist Studies, University of Jammu; Central Institute of Buddhist Studies, Leh, Jammu and Kashmir; Central Institute of Himalayan Culture Studies, Dahung, Arunachal Pradesh; Central Institute of Higher Tibetan Studies, Sarnath, and many more.

Conclusion

To conclude, we can say that Buddhism or the Buddhist philosophy has contributed immensely towards the overall higher learning as the system of education has remained great since ancient time. However, with the rise and expansion of thought, mainly with the advancement in the various fields like science and technology, we can see a sharp decline in the development and the maintenance of the Buddhist education system. This may be due to degradation in the values of human moral behavior or it may be due to the modern artificial fascination caused by the outside materialistic world.

In order to live a wholesome or balanced life both within oneself and outside the world, we need to make some major changes by focusing on certain improvements like inculcating and establishing various modern academic and research institutions that include the Buddhist education in the main course of studies to propagate Buddhist Studies and its value based education throughout the country.

References

- Radha Kumud Mookerji, *Ancient Indian Education* (Vol. 2), Delhi: Cosmo Publications, 1999, p. 374
Ibid. pp.(395-96)
- S.R. Goyal, *Indian Buddhism after the Buddha*, Jodhpur: Kusumanjali Book World, 2003, pp-(174-187)
- R.K. Mookerji, op. Cit., p.557
- Majjhima Nikaya Vol.(i), p.377
- B.N. Mishra, *Nālandā, Sources and Background*, Vol. I, Delhi: B.R. Publishing Corporation, 1998, p. 181
Ibid. p. 181
- D.C. Ahir, *Buddhist Shrines in India*, Delhi: B.R. Publishing Corporation, 1986, p. 71
- Suraj Narain Sharma, *Buddhist Social and Moral Education*, Delhi: Parimal Publications, 2011, p. 45
- R.K. Mookerji, op. Cit., p.566
Ibid. p. 596
- <http://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/odantapuri>
- R.K. Mookerji, op. Cit., p. 587
- http://en.m.indiansaga.com/history/golden_education.html
- R.K. Mookerji, op. cit., pp.(590-91)
Ibid. pp.(589-94)

Buddhist Education and the Present Scenario in the Indian University System

S.R. Goyal, op.cit., p.187

P.V. Bapat (ed.), 2500 Years of Buddhism, New Delhi: Publication Division, Government of India, 1956, p. 192

http://indiansaga.com/history/golden_education.html

https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Buddhist_universities_and_colleges

ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ : ਸਵੈ-ਵਿਕਾਸ ਦੀ ਸਿਰਜਣਾ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ

ਹਰਜਿੰਦਰ ਸਿੰਘ

ਭੂਮਿਕਾ

ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਸਾਹਿਤ ਜਗਤ ਦੇ ਇਕ ਉੱਘੇ ਹਸਤਾਖਰ ਹਨ। ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਸਾਹਿਤ ਵਿਚ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਸ਼ਨਾਖਤ ਇਕ ਸਿਰਮੌਰ ਕਹਾਣੀਕਾਰ ਵਜੋਂ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਸੰਪੂਰਨ ਰੂਪ ਵਿਚ ਚਾਰ ਕਹਾਣੀ ਸੰਗ੍ਰਹਿ ਤੇ ਜਿਹਲਮ ਵਗਦਾ ਰਿਹਾ, ਗੋਰੀ ਫ਼ਸਲ ਦੇ ਸੌਦਾਗਰ, ਡੂੰਘੇ ਪਾਣੀਆਂ ਦਾ ਦੁੱਖ, ਬਲਦੀ ਬਰਫ਼ ਦਾ ਸੇਕ, ਇਕ ਨਾਵਲਿਟ ਗੁਆਚੀ ਝਾਂਜਰ ਦੀ ਚੀਖ ਅਤੇ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਵਿਚ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਸ਼ਿਤ ਹੋ ਚੁੱਕੀ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਦੇ ਨਾਲ ਹੀ ਠੰਡੀ ਕਾਂਗੜੀ ਕਾ ਧੁੰਆਂ, ਇਸਤਿਹਾਰੋਂ ਵਾਲੀ ਹਵੇਲੀ ਅਤੇ ਸਤੀ ਸਰ ਕਾ ਸੂਰਜ ਤਿੰਨ ਕਹਾਣੀ ਸੰਗ੍ਰਹਿ ਉਰਦੂ ਜੁਬਾਨ ਵਿਚ ਵੀ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਸ਼ਿਤ ਹੋ ਚੁੱਕੇ ਹਨ। ਇਸ ਤੋਂ ਇਲਾਵਾ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੁਆਰਾ ਵੱਖ-ਵੱਖ ਵਿਸ਼ਿਆਂ/ਮੁੱਦਿਆਂ ਉੱਤੇ ਰਚਿਤ ਲੇਖ/ਇੰਟਰਵਿਊਆਂ ਵੀ ਵਿਭਿੰਨ ਭਾਸ਼ਾਵਾਂ ਦੇ ਰਿਸਾਲਿਆਂ, ਸਾਹਿਤਕ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਲਗਾਤਾਰ ਛਪਦੀਆਂ ਅਤੇ ਭਖਵਾ ਸੰਵਾਦ ਸਿਰਜਦੀਆਂ ਰਹਿੰਦੀਆਂ ਹਨ। ਇਸ ਸਦਕਾ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਰਾਸ਼ਟਰੀ ਤੇ ਅੰਤਰਰਾਸ਼ਟਰੀ ਪੱਧਰ ਉੱਤੇ ਸੁਹਿਰਦ ਪਾਠਕਾਂ, ਸਮੀਖਿਅਕਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਚਿੰਤਕਾਂ ਦੀ ਖਿੱਚ ਦਾ ਕੇਂਦਰ ਬਣੇ ਰਹਿੰਦੇ ਹਨ।

ਆਧੁਨਿਕ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਵਾਰਤਕ ਸਾਹਿਤ ਦੀ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਵਿਧਾ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਕੋਈ ਸੱਤ-ਅੱਠ ਦਹਾਕੇ ਪੁਰਾਣਾ ਹੈ। “ਇਹ ਆਧੁਨਿਕ ਵਾਰਤਕ ਦੀ ਨਵੀਨ ਵਿਧਾ ਹੈ, ਜਿਸਦਾ ਸੰਬੰਧ ਆਤਮ ਵਰਣਨ ਨਾਲ ਹੈ। ਇਹ ਅਜਿਹਾ ਵਾਰਤਕ ਰੂਪ ਹੈ, ਜਿਸ ਵਿਚ ਲੇਖਕ ਆਪਣੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਅਤੇ ਵਿਅਕਤਿਤੱਵ ਦੀਆਂ ਵਿਸ਼ੇਸ਼ ਘਟਨਾਵਾਂ ਦਾ ਵਰਣਨ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੋਇਆ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਪੁਨਰ ਸਿਰਜਣਾ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਭਾਵ ਵਾਰਤਕ ਕਲਾ ਰਾਹੀਂ ਉਹ ਆਪਣੇ ਅਨੁਭਵ ਅਤੇ ਸ਼ਖ਼ਸੀਅਤ-ਨਿਰਮਾਣ ਦਾ ਲੇਖਾ-ਜੋਖਾ ਉਲੀਕਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਦਾ ਮੰਤਵ ਪਾਠਕਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਮੁਖਾਤਿਬ ਹੋਣਾ ਹੀ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ, ਜੋ ਉਸਦੇ ਜੀਵਨ-ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਜਾਂ ਅਨੁਭਵ ਤੋਂ ਕੋਈ ਸੋਧ ਜਾਂ ਅਗਵਾਈ ਹਾਸਲ ਕਰ ਸਕਦੇ ਹਨ। ਇਸ ਵਿਚ ਲੇਖਕ ਦੀ ਯਾਦ-ਸ਼ਕਤੀ ਅਤੇ ਬਿਆਨ-ਸ਼ਕਤੀ ਦੀ ਸੁਚੱਜੀ ਵਰਤੋਂ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਹੈ ਅਤੇ ਆਪਣੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਦਾ ਸੱਚਾ ਚਿੱਠਾ ਪੇਸ਼ ਕਰਕੇ ਪਾਠਕ ਨਾਲ ਬੜਾ ਨੇੜੇ ਦਾ ਸੰਬੰਧ ਬਣਾ ਲੈਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਵਿਚ ਇਕ ਪਾਸੇ ਨਿੱਜ ਅਤੇ ਦੂਜੇ ਪਾਸੇ ਸਮਾਜਿਕ/ਧਾਰਮਿਕ/ਰਾਜਨੀਤਿਕ ਆਦਿ ਸਭ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀਆਂ ਸਥਿਤੀਆਂ/ਪਰਿਸਥਿਤੀਆਂ ਬਿਆਨ ਹੁੰਦੀਆਂ ਹਨ।”¹ ਅਸਲ ਵਿਚ “ਸਵੈਜੀਵਨੀ ਵਿਚ ਦੋ ਮੁਖੀ ਵਿਸਤਾਰ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ, ਇਕ ਇਤਿਹਾਸਕ ਤੇ ਦੂਸਰਾ ਮਾਨਵੀ। ਸਵੈਜੀਵਨੀ ਵਿਚ ਜਿਥੇ ਮੁੱਖ ਪਾਤਰ ਦੀ ਜੀਵਨਗਤੀ ਦਾ ਵੇਰਵਾ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ ਉਥੇ ਇਹ ਉਸਦੇ ਚਰਿੱਤਰ ਅਤੇ ਸ਼ਖ਼ਸੀਅਤ ਨੂੰ ਵੀ ਪੇਸ਼ ਕਰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਸਵੈਜੀਵਨੀ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸਕ ਪੱਖ ਇਸਦੀ ਸੰਰਚਨਾ ਨਾਲ ਸੰਬੰਧਤ ਹੈ ਤੇ ਇਸਦਾ ਚਰਿੱਤਰ-ਚਿਤਰਨ ਦਾ ਪੱਖ ਸੰਰਚਨਾ ਦੀ ਟੈਕਸਚਰ ਨਾਲ। ਇਸ ਕਰਕੇ ਸਵੈਜੀਵਨੀ ਸਿਰਫ਼ ਘਟਨਾਵਾਂ ਦਾ ਕੋਰਾ ਵਰਣਨ ਨਹੀਂ ਸਗੋਂ ਲੇਖਕ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਘਟਨਾਵਾਂ ਪਿੱਛੇ ਵਰਤ ਰਹੇ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਤੇ ਭਾਵਨਾਵਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਵੀ ਧਿਆਨ ਵਿਚ ਰੱਖਦਾ ਹੈ।”² ਇਸ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਨੂੰ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਨੇ ਬਾਈ ਪਾਠਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਪਸਾਰਿਆ ਅਤੇ ਵਿਉਂਤਬੱਧ ਕੀਤਾ ਹੈ।

ਅਸਿਸਟੈਂਟ ਪ੍ਰੋਫ਼ੈਸਰ, ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਵਿਭਾਗ, ਜੰਮੂ ਯੂਨੀਵਰਸਿਟੀ, ਜੰਮੂ, ਭਾਰਤ

ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੋਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ : ਸਵੈ-ਵਿਕਾਸ ਦੀ ਸਿਰਜਣਾ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ

ਇਸ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਦੇ ਹਰੇਕ ਪਾਠ ਦਾ ਵਕਤਾ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਆਪ ਨਹੀਂ ਕੋਈ ਅਨਯਪੁਰਖ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ, ਇਹ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕ ਸਿਰਜਣਾ ਪਹਿਲੀ ਪੜ੍ਹਤ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਜੀਵਨੀ/ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਲੇਖਾਂ ਦੇ ਸੰਗ੍ਰਹਿ ਦਾ ਭੁਲੇਖਾ ਸਿਰਜਦੀ ਹੈ ਪਰੰਤੂ ਅਜਿਹਾ ਹੈ ਨਹੀਂ ਇਸ ਵਿਚ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕ ਜੁਗਤਾਂ ਰਾਹੀਂ 'ਸਵੈ' ਨੂੰ ਪ੍ਰਗਟਾਉਣ ਦੀ ਕਲਾ-ਕੁਸ਼ਲਤਾ ਛੁਪੀ ਹੋਈ ਹੈ। ਮੇਰੀ ਜਾਚੇ, ਇਸ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਦੇ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਨੂੰ ਪ੍ਰਮੁੱਖ ਰੂਪ ਵਿਚ ਧਾਰਮਕ, ਸਮਾਜਕ, ਆਰਥਕ ਅਤੇ ਰਾਜਸੀ ਪਰਿਸਥਿਤੀਆਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਗੁਜ਼ਰਦਾ ਦੇਖਿਆ ਜਾ ਸਕਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕ ਪਸਾਰਾਂ ਦਾ ਅਧਿਐਨ-ਵਿਸ਼ਲੇਸ਼ਣ ਕਰਕੇ ਹੀ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਵਿਕਾਸ ਦੀ ਯਾਤਰਾ ਨਾਲ ਜੁੜੇ ਹੋਏ ਅਹਿਮ ਪਹਿਲੂਆਂ ਅਤੇ ਸਿਰਜਣਾਤਮਕਤਾ ਵਿਚ ਛੁਪੀ ਹੋਈ ਮਾਨਵੀ ਚੇਤਨਾ ਦੀ ਥਾਹ ਪਾਈ ਜਾ ਸਕਦੀ ਹੈ।

ਮੂਲ ਸ਼ਬਦ: ਧਾਰਮਕ, ਸਮਾਜਕ, ਆਰਥਕ, ਰਾਜਨੀਤਕ ਅਤੇ ਸਭਿਆਚਾਰਕ।

I

ਉੱਨੀ ਸੌ ਸੰਤਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਭਾਰਤ-ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਵੰਡ ਨੂੰ ਵਿਸ਼ਵ ਦੇ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਵਿਚ ਇਨਸਾਨੀਅਤ ਦੇ ਕਾਲੇ ਦਿਨਾਂ ਦੇ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਨਾਲ ਜਾਣਿਆ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਦੇ ਪੰਨੇ ਮਨੁੱਖੀ ਖੂਨ ਦੀ ਸਿਆਹੀ ਨਾਲ ਲਿਖੇ ਹੋਏ ਹਨ। ਇਸ ਅਪਮਾਨਿਤ ਮਨੁੱਖੀ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਦੀ ਗਾਥਾ ਅਨੇਕ ਇਤਿਹਾਸਕ ਪੁਸਤਕਾਂ, ਸਾਹਿਤਕ ਪੁਸਤਕਾਂ, ਫ਼ਿਲਮਾਂ ਆਦਿ ਦਸਤਾਵੇਜ਼ਾਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਪ੍ਰਾਪਤ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਵਿਚਾਰਅਧੀਨ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਦੇ ਨਾਇਕ ਜਨਾਬ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਦੀ ਪੁਨਰ-ਉਸਾਰੀ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ ਵੀ ਸੰਤਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਭਾਰਤ-ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਵੰਡ ਨਾਲ ਹੀ ਆਰੰਭ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਅਲਕਲੂ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਦਾ ਜੰਮਪਲ ਹੈ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਦੀ ਉਮਰ ਉਦੋਂ ਦੋ ਸਾਲ ਸੀ, ਜਦੋਂ ਸੰਤਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਵੰਡ ਦੇ ਦੰਗਾ-ਫ਼ਸਾਦੀਆਂ ਨੇ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਦੇ ਮਰਦ ਮੈਂਬਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਜਾਨੋ-ਮਾਰ ਦਿੱਤਾ ਅਤੇ ਹੱਸਦੇ-ਵਸਦੇ ਘਰਾਂ, ਪਿੰਡਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਮੁਹੱਲਿਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਕਬਰਾਂ ਦੇ ਖੰਡਰਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਬਦਲ ਦਿੱਤਾ ਸੀ। ਇਸ ਕਹਿਰ ਦੀ ਮਾਰੂ ਹਨੇਰੀ ਨੂੰ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ, ਪੱਛਮੀ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਅਤੇ ਪੂਰਬੀ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਦੇ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਨੇ ਸਾਂਝੇ ਰੂਪ ਵਿਚ ਤਨ-ਮਨ 'ਤੇ ਹੰਢਾਇਆ। ਇਸ ਕਤਲੇਆਰਤ ਵਿਚ ਦੰਗਾ-ਫ਼ਸਾਦੀਆਂ ਨੇ ਧਰਮ ਨੂੰ ਇਕ ਹਥਿਆਰ ਦੇ ਤੌਰ 'ਤੇ ਇਸਤੇਮਾਲ ਕੀਤਾ, ਜਿਸ ਨੂੰ ਸੌਂਝੇ ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀਕ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਦਾ ਮੁਲੰਮਾ ਚਾੜ੍ਹਿਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਸੀ। ਇਸ ਵਿਚ ਹਿੰਦੂ, ਸਿੱਖ ਅਤੇ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨ ਤਿੰਨੋਂ ਫ਼ਿਰਕਿਆਂ ਦਾ ਜਾਨੀ-ਮਾਲੀ ਨੁਕਸਾਨ ਹੋਇਆ। ਇਸ ਧਾਰਮਕ-ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀਕ ਯੁੱਧ ਵਿਚ ਸਧਾਰਣ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਸਧਾਰਣ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਦੇ ਖ਼ਿਲਾਫ਼ ਵਰਤਿਆ ਗਿਆ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਆਪਣੀ ਵੱਡੀ ਭੈਣ ਜੁਬੇਦਾ ਦੇ ਹਵਾਲੇ ਨਾਲ ਲਿਖਦਾ ਹੈ:

ਮੈਂ 1947 ਦੀ ਦੇਸ਼ ਵੰਡ ਤੇ ਉਸ ਕਾਰਨ ਹੋਏ ਲੋਕਾਈ ਦੇ ਕਤਲ-ਓ-ਗ਼ਾਰਤ, ਬਲਾਤਕਾਰੀ ਤੇ ਮੰਦਹਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਅੱਖੀਂ ਵੇਖੀ ਹਕੀਕਤ ਹਾਂ।...ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਤੇ ਧਰਮ ਦੇ ਨਾਂ 'ਤੇ ਰਾਕਸ਼ਾਂ ਨੇ ਇਨਸਾਨ ਨੂੰ ਮਾਰਿਆ। ਦਹਿਸ਼ਤ, ਵਹਿਸ਼ਤ ਤੇ ਗ਼ਾਰਦ ਦਾ ਨੰਗਾ ਨਾਚ ਨੱਚਿਆ ਗਿਆ। ਸਾਡਾ ਦਾਦਾ ਮਾਸਟਰ ਹਬੀਬ ਉੱਲਾ, ਪਿਓ ਮਾਸਟਰ ਸ਼ੇਖ਼ ਗ਼ੁਲਾਮ ਹੁਸੈਨ, ਚਾਚਾ ਅਬਦੁਲ ਕਰੀਮ ਤੇ ਉਹਦੀ ਵਹੁਟੀ ਤੇ ਬੱਚਾ, ਚਾਚਾ ਅਬਦੁਲ ਕਯੂਮ, ਫੁੱਫੜ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਦੀਨ ਅਤੇ ਦੋ ਭਰਾ ਫਿਰਕੂ ਰੋਲਿਆ ਦੀ ਭੇਟ ਚੜ੍ਹ ਗਏ।³

ਇਥੇ ਇਕ ਮਹੱਤਵਪੂਰਣ ਗੱਲ ਦਾ ਖੁਲਾਸਾ ਕਰਨਾ ਜ਼ਰੂਰੀ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਦੇ ਅਗਲੇਰੇ ਨਿਬੰਧਮੂਲਕ ਪਾਠਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਇਸ ਮਾਰੂ ਦੁਖਾਂਤ ਦੀ ਹੁਕ ਨੂੰ ਜ਼ਿਆਦਾ ਸਪੇਸ 'ਤੇ ਫੈਲਣ ਨਹੀਂ ਦਿੰਦਾ ਅਤੇ ਨਾ ਹੀ ਹਮਦਰਦੀ ਦਾ ਰੋਣ-ਧੋਣ ਅਲਾਪਦਾ ਹੈ। ਉਸ ਦੀ ਅਗਹਾਂਵਧੂ ਸੋਚ ਦੀ ਖੂਬਸੂਰਤੀ ਇਸ ਗੱਲ ਵਿਚ ਨਿਹਿਤ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਅਤੀਤ ਨੂੰ ਯਾਦ ਤਾਂ ਰੱਖਦਾ ਹੈ ਪਰ ਆਪਣੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਪੰਥ ਦੇ ਵਿਕਾਸ ਦੇ ਅਗਲੇਰੇ ਪੜਾਵਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਅੜਚਣ ਨਹੀਂ ਬਨਣ ਦਿੰਦਾ ਅਤੇ ਨਾ ਹੀ ਉਹ ਇਸ ਦੀ ਆੜ ਜਾਂ ਹਮਦਰਦੀ ਨਾਲ ਕਿਸੇ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਦਾ ਫ਼ਇਦਾ ਜਾਂ ਰੁਤਬਾ ਹਾਸਿਲ ਕਰਨਾ ਚਾਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ, ਸਗੋਂ ਉਹ ਤਾਂ ਫ਼ਿਰਕਾਪ੍ਰਸਤੀ ਦੀ ਭਾਵਨਾ ਨਾਲ ਪੈਦਾ ਹੋਣ ਵਾਲੇ ਨਿਰਾਥਕ ਅਤੇ ਮਾਰੂ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਤਰਕ ਅਤੇ ਸੰਵਾਦ ਨਾਲ ਦਲੀਲਾਂ ਸਹਿਤ ਨਜ਼ਿੱਠਣ ਦਾ ਯਤਨ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਗੱਲ ਦੀ ਪੁਸ਼ਟੀ ਲਈ ਅਸੀਂ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਦੋ ਨਿਬੰਧਾਂ 'ਚੇਤੇ ਆਈਆਂ ਕਿਸ

ਦਫ਼ਨਾਈਆਂ' ਅਤੇ 'ਦਿਲਗੀਰੀਆਂ' ਦੇ ਇਕ-ਇਕ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵਿਚ ਲੁਪਤ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਸੂਝ ਅਤੇ ਦ੍ਰਿਸ਼ਟੀ ਨੂੰ ਫਰੋਲਣ ਦੀ ਕੋਸ਼ਿਸ਼ ਕਰਦੇ ਹਾਂ।

'ਚੇਤੇ ਆਈਆਂ ਕਿਸ ਦਫ਼ਨਾਈਆਂ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲਾ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਰਿਆਸਤ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਦੀ ਸਿਆਸਤ ਬਾਰੇ ਕੇਂਦਰ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰੀ (ਮੀਡੀਆ) ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਦੇ ਮਾੜੇ ਰਵੱਈਏ ਨੂੰ ਠੀਕ ਕਰਨ ਲਈ ਜਲੰਧਰ ਵਿਚ ਬਤੌਰ ਪਬਲਿਕ ਰਿਲੇਸ਼ਨ ਅਫ਼ਸਰ ਵਜੋਂ ਕੀਤੀ ਗਈ ਨਿਯੁਕਤੀ ਦੇ ਸਮੇਂ ਨਾਲ ਸੰਬੰਧਤ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਸਮੇਂ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਅਨੇਕ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਦੇ ਸੰਪਾਦਕਾਂ, ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਦੋਸਤੀਆਂ ਕਾਇਮ ਕਰ ਲਈਆਂ ਸਨ। ਇਸ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵਿਚਲੀ ਘਟਨਾ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਦੇ ਪ੍ਰਸਿੱਧ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰ ਸ. ਸ. ਮੀਸ਼ਾ ਨਾਲ ਜੁੜੀ ਹੋਈ ਹੈ। ਮੀਸ਼ਾ ਅਕਸਰ ਸਵੇਰੇ ਸੈਰ ਕਰਦਿਆਂ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਕੋਲ ਆਉਂਦਾ ਗੱਲਾਂ ਮਾਰਦਾ ਸਿਗਰੇਟ ਤੇ ਚਾਹ ਪੀ ਕੇ ਵਾਪਸ ਚਲਾ ਜਾਂਦਾ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦਿਨਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਹੀ ਵਾਪਰੀ ਬਲਿਊ ਅਪਰੇਸ਼ਨ ਸਟਾਰ (ਉੱਨੀ ਸੌ ਚੌਰਾਸੀ) ਦੀ ਘਟਨਾ ਨੇ ਸਾਰੀ ਦੁਨੀਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਹਿਲਾ ਕੇ ਰੱਖ ਦਿੱਤਾ। ਸਾਰੇ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਵਿਚ ਕਰਫਿਊ ਲਗਾ ਦਿੱਤਾ ਗਿਆ। ਕਈ ਦਿਨਾਂ ਬਾਅਦ ਜਦੋਂ ਮੀਸ਼ਾ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਕੋਲ ਆਇਆ ਤਾਂ ਉਹ ਵੀ ਇਸ ਘਟਨਾ ਦੀ ਪੀੜਾ ਨਾਲ ਦੁਖੀ ਸੀ। ਚਾਹ ਪੀਣ ਮਗਰੋਂ ਮੀਸ਼ਾ ਤੇ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਫੀਅਟ ਕਾਰ ਵਿਚ ਘੁੰਮਣ ਲਈ ਨਿਕਲੇ। ਅਚਾਨਕ ਉਸਦੀ ਕਾਰ ਇਕ ਰਿਕਸ਼ੇ ਵਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਸਾਈਕਲ ਰਾਡ ਨਾਲ ਘਿਸਰ ਜਾਂਦੀ ਹੈ ਅਤੇ ਕਾਰ ਨੂੰ ਝਰੀਟ ਪੈ ਜਾਂਦੀ ਹੈ। ਉਹ ਖਿਜਿਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਕਾਰ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਉਤਰਕੇ ਰਿਕਸ਼ਾ ਚਾਲਕ ਦੇ ਚੰਡ ਕੱਢ ਮਾਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਰਿਕਸ਼ੇ ਉੱਤੇ ਬੈਠੇ ਲਾਲੇ ਨੇ ਮੀਸ਼ੇ ਨੂੰ ਰੋਅਬ ਨਾਲ ਰੋਕਿਆ ਅਤੇ ਆਪਣੇ ਨੁਕਸਾਨ ਦੇ ਪੈਸੇ ਲੈਣ ਦੀ ਪੇਸ਼ਕਸ਼ ਕੀਤੀ। ਬਸ ਏਨੀ ਗੱਲ 'ਤੇ ਮੀਸ਼ਾ ਅੱਗਬਥੂਲਾ ਹੋ ਗਿਆ ਅਤੇ ਕਹਿਣ ਲੱਗਾ:

ਓਏ ਕੰਜਰਾ ਬਾਣੀਆ ! ਤੂੰ ਮੈਨੂੰ ਪੈਸੇ ਦੱਸਣਾ ਐਂ। ਤੁਸੀਂ ਸਾਨੂੰ ਪੈਸਿਆਂ ਨਾਲ ਖਰੀਦਣਾ ਚਾਹੁੰਦੇ ਹੋ। ਜਾ ਉਸ ਕੁੱਤੀ ਬਾਹਮਣੀ (ਇੰਦਰਾ ਗਾਂਧੀ) ਨੂੰ ਕਹਿ ਦੇ ਕਿ ਸਿੱਖ ਅਜੇ ਮਰਿਆ ਨੀ ਅਤੇ ਨਾ ਹੀ ਉਸਦੀ ਅਣਖ ਮਰੀ ਹੈ।⁴

ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਮੀਸ਼ੇ ਨੂੰ ਪਕੜ ਕੇ ਜਦ ਕਾਰ ਵਿਚ ਬੈਠਾਣ ਲੱਗਾ ਤਾਂ ਉਸ ਨੇ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਨੂੰ ਧੱਕਾ ਮਾਰਦਿਆਂ ਕਿਹਾ:

ਪਰਾਂ ਹਟ ਮੁਸਲਿਆ। ਤੁਸਾਂ ਕਿਹੜਾ ਸਾਡੇ ਨਾਲ ਘੱਟ ਕੀਤੀ ਹੈ।⁵

'ਦਿਲਗੀਰੀਆਂ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲਾ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਬੋਟੇ ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਮਿਲੀਟੈਂਟਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਸੰਬੰਧਾਂ ਦੀ ਗਾਥਾ ਹੈ। ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਮਿਲੀਟੈਂਟਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਸੰਬੰਧ ਰੱਖਣ ਅਤੇ ਗਤੀਵਿਧੀਆਂ ਵਿਚ ਭਾਗ ਲੈਣ ਕਰਕੇ ਗ੍ਰਿਫ਼ਤਾਰ ਕਰ ਲਿਆ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਪੁਲਿਸ ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਬੇਰਹਿਮੀ ਨਾਲ ਤਸੀਹੇ ਦਿੰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀਆਂ ਮੁਸ਼ਕਲਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਹੋਰ ਵਾਧਾ ਹੋ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਪੁਲਿਸ ਵਾਰ-ਵਾਰ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਅਤੇ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਪਰਿਵਾਰਕ ਮੈਂਬਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਤਫ਼ਤੀਸ ਲਈ ਥਾਣੇ ਵਿਚ ਬੁਲਾਉਂਦੀ ਹੈ। ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਕੇਸ ਦਾ ਇੰਚਾਰਜ ਡੀ. ਐਸ. ਪੀ ਮੱਖਣ ਲਾਲ ਸ਼ਰਮਾ ਨੂੰ ਲਗਾਇਆ ਗਿਆ। ਉਹ ਸਖ਼ਤ ਤਬੀਅਤ ਦਾ ਬੰਦਾ ਸੀ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਇਕ ਦਿਨ ਜਦੋਂ ਇੰਟੈਰੋਗੇਸ਼ਨ ਸੈਂਟਰ ਵਿਚ ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੂੰ ਮਿਲਣ ਗਿਆ ਤਾਂ ਮੱਖਣ ਲਾਲ ਸ਼ਰਮਾ ਉਸ ਨਾਲ ਖਹਿਬੜ ਪਿਆ ਅਤੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਭਾਰਤ ਦੇ ਵਿਰੋਧੀ ਅਤੇ ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਦੇ ਹੱਕ ਵਿਚ ਭੁਗਤਣ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨ ਕਹਿ ਕੇ ਜ਼ਲੀਲ ਕੀਤਾ। ਮੱਖਣ ਲਾਲ ਸ਼ਰਮਾ ਦੇ ਪਰਿਵਾਰਕ ਮੈਂਬਰਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਰਿਸ਼ਤੇਦਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨਾਂ ਨੇ ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਵਿਚ ਜਾਨੋ-ਮਾਰ ਦਿੱਤਾ ਸੀ। ਇਸ ਲਈ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨਾਂ ਪ੍ਰਤੀ ਉਸ ਦਾ ਰਵੱਈਆ ਸਖ਼ਤ ਸੀ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਲਿਖਦਾ ਹੈ:

ਮੱਖਣ ਲਾਲ ਸ਼ਰਮਾ ਉਂਝ ਤਾਂ ਇੱਕ ਬਾਅਸੂਲ ਅਫ਼ਸਰ ਸੀ।...ਉਸਨੇ ਗੱਲਾਂ ਗੱਲਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਇਹ ਵੀ ਦੱਸਿਆ ਕਿ ਉਸਦਾ ਪਿਓ ਤੇ ਹੋਰ ਰਿਸ਼ਤੇਦਾਰ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨਾਂ ਨੇ ਮਾਰ ਦਿੱਤੇ ਸਨ ਤੇ ਉਹ ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਦੀ ਭੇਟ ਚੜ੍ਹ ਗਏ। ਜਵਾਬ ਵਿੱਚ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਨੇ ਕਿਹਾ ਕਿ ਉਸਦਾ ਸਾਰਾ ਖਾਨਦਾਨ ਵੀ 1947 ਵਿੱਚ ਕੱਟੜ ਹਿੰਦੂਆਂ ਨੇ ਕਤਲ ਕਰ ਦਿੱਤਾ ਸੀ, ਪਰ ਉਹ ਇਸਦਾ ਦੋਸ਼ ਹਿੰਦੂਆਂ ਦੇ ਸਿਰ ਨਹੀਂ ਮੜ੍ਹਦੇ, ਕਿਉਂਕਿ ਅਜਿਹੇ ਕੰਮ ਕਰਨ ਵਾਲੇ ਨਾ ਹਿੰਦੂ ਹਨ, ਨਾ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨ। ਇਹ ਕੰਮ ਵਹਿਸ਼ੀ ਜਨੌਰਾਂ ਦਾ ਹੁੰਦਾ

ਹੈ, ਨਾ ਕਿ ਇਨਸਾਨਾਂ ਦਾ।⁶

ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਉਪਰੋਕਤ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਾਂ ਵਿਚਲੀ ਬਿਆਨੀਅਤਾ ਨੂੰ ਅਗਰ ਗੌਹ ਨਾਲ ਸਮਝੀਏ ਤਾਂ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਾਂ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਪਾਤਰਾਂ ਦੇ ਮਾਨਸਕ ਤਨਾਉ ਦਾ ਅੰਦੇਸ਼ਾ ਆਪਣੀ ਟੇਕ ਪ੍ਰਮੁੱਖ ਦੇ ਪਸਾਰਾਂ ਉੱਤੇ ਹੀ ਕੇਂਦਰਤ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਪ੍ਰਮੁੱਖ ਦੇ ਪਸਾਰ ਇਹ ਹਨ। ਪਹਿਲਾ ਉੱਨੀ ਸੌ ਸੰਤਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਅਣਕਿਆਸੀ ਭਾਰਤ-ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਵੰਡ ਅਤੇ ਦੂਸਰਾ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਵਿਚ ਉੱਨੀ ਸੌ ਚੌਰਾਸੀ ਦਾ ਸਾਕਾ ਨੀਲਾ ਤਾਰਾ ਅਤੇ ਰਿਆਸਤ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿਚ ਨਿਰੰਤਰ ਆਂਤਕੀ ਮਹੌਲ ਪੈਦਾ ਕਰ ਰਹੀ ਮਿਲੀਟੈਂਸੀ। ਇਸ ਆਂਤਕੀ ਮਹੌਲ ਤੋਂ ਕ੍ਰਮਕ ਤੌਰ 'ਤੇ ਪ੍ਰਭਾਵਤ ਹੋਣ ਵਾਲਾ ਪਹਿਲਾ ਵਿਅਕਤੀ ਸ. ਸ. ਮੀਸ਼ਾ ਹੈ, ਜਿਹੜਾ ਕਿ ਇਕ ਚੇਤਨ ਅਤੇ ਸਿਰਜਣਾਤਮਕ ਪ੍ਰਤਿਭਾ ਦਾ ਸਵਾਮੀ ਹੈ ਅਤੇ ਦੂਸਰਾ ਵਿਅਕਤੀ ਇਕ ਪੁਲਿਸ ਅਫਸਰ ਹੈ, ਜਿਸ ਦੇ ਹੱਥ ਵਿਚ ਦੇਸ਼ ਦੀ ਸੁਰੱਖਿਆ ਅਤੇ ਸੁਧਾਰ ਦੀ ਜ਼ਿੰਮੇਵਾਰੀ ਹੈ। ਦੋਨੋਂ ਵਿਅਕਤੀ ਇਸ ਤਣਾਉਜਨਕ ਸਥਿਤੀ ਵਿਚ ਮਾਨਸਕ ਸੰਤੁਲਨ 'ਤੇ ਨਿਰਯੰਤਰਣ ਨਹੀਂ ਰੱਖ ਪਾਉਂਦੇ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੋਨੋਂ ਪਹਿਲੂਆਂ ਦਾ ਮੁੱਖ ਧੁਰਾ ਧਰਮ ਅਤੇ ਧਰਮ ਆਧਾਰਤ ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਦੁਆਲੇ ਹੀ ਘੁੰਮਦਾ ਨਜ਼ਰ ਆਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਭਾਵੇਂ ਇਹੋ-ਜਿਹੀਆਂ ਗਤੀਵਿਧੀਆਂ ਨਾਲ ਜੁੜੇ ਅਨੇਕ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਇਸ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਵਿਚ ਘਟਨਾਸਥਲ ਅਤੇ ਪਾਤਰਾਂਵਲੀ ਦੀ ਤਬਦੀਲੀ ਨਾਲ ਪਸਰੇ ਪਏ ਹਨ ਪਰ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਰਜਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਸਮਾਨਤਾ ਰੱਖਦੇ ਹਨ। ਇਥੇ ਸਮਝਣ ਵਾਲੀ ਇਕ ਹੋਰ ਮਹੱਤਵਪੂਰਣ ਗੱਲ ਇਹ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਇਸ ਤਣਾਉਜਨਕ ਸਥਿਤੀ ਵਿਚ ਮਨੁੱਖ ਹਿਤੈਸ਼ੀ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਦੀ ਵਿਚੋਲਗੀ ਵਾਲਾ ਨਾਤਾ ਸਥਾਪਤ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਉਹ ਮੀਸ਼ੇ ਅਤੇ ਸ਼ਰਮੇ ਵਲੋਂ ਬੋਲੇ ਅਪ-ਸ਼ਬਦਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਵੀ ਦੁਰ-ਵਿਵਹਾਰਤਾ ਵਾਲੇ ਸ਼ਬਦ ਨਹੀਂ ਸਮਝਦਾ ਅਤੇ ਨਾ ਹੀ ਆਪ ਜਵਾਬੀ ਬਿਆਨਬਾਜ਼ੀ ਵਜੋਂ ਜ਼ਿਹਨੀ ਕੁੜਤਣ ਘੋਲਦਾ ਹੈ, ਕਿਉਂਕਿ ਉਹ ਆਪ ਇਹੋ-ਜਿਹੀਆਂ ਦੁਖਾਂਤਕ ਘਟਨਾਵਾਂ ਦਾ ਸ਼ਿਕਾਰ ਸੀ ਅਤੇ ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਨੌਕਰੀ-ਪੇਸ਼ੇ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਵੀ ਅਜਿਹੀਆਂ ਢੇਰ ਮਾਨਵ ਅਹਿਤੈਸ਼ੀ ਗਤੀਵਿਧੀਆਂ ਦਾ ਸਾਹਮਣਾ ਕਰਨਾ ਪਿਆ।

ਇਸ ਸਵੈ-ਗਾਥਾ ਦੀ ਸਿਰਜਣਾਤਮਕਤਾ ਵਿਚ ਕੁਝ ਅਜਿਹੇ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵੀ ਰੂਪਮਾਨ ਹੁੰਦੇ ਹਨ, ਜਿਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਸਵੈ-ਜਾਚਨਾ ਵਾਲੀ ਬਿਰਤੀ ਉਜਾਗਰ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਸਵੈ-ਜਾਚਨਾ ਦੀ ਬਿਰਤੀ ਵਿਚ ਸਵੈ-ਸੰਵਾਦ, ਧਾਰਮਕ-ਭਾਈਚਾਰਕ ਮਰਯਾਦਾਵਾਂ ਦਾ ਆਦਰ/ਪਾਲਣ, ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਦੀਆਂ ਸ਼ਰਧਾਮਈ ਸੰਵੇਦਨਾਵਾਂ/ਭਾਵਨਾਵਾਂ ਆਦਿ ਨੂੰ ਟਿੱਪਣੀਮੂਲਕ, ਵਿਅੰਗਆਤਮਕ/ਆਲੋਚਨਾਤਮਕ ਅਤੇ ਭਾਵਨਾਤਮਕ ਨਜ਼ਰੀਏ ਨਾਲ ਪਰਖਦਾ ਹੈ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਕੁਝ ਪ੍ਰਮੁੱਖ ਪਸਾਰਾਂ ਦਾ ਜ਼ਿਕਰ ਇਸ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਰ ਹੈ:

'ਅੱਗ ਦੀ ਨਦੀ ਦੇ ਤਾਰੂ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵਿਚ ਇਹ ਦਰਸਾਇਆ ਗਿਆ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਸਵਰਗਵਾਸੀ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਬੜੇ ਮੁਖੌਲੀਏ, ਜ਼ਿੰਦਾਦਿਲ, ਲਤੀਫੇਬਾਜ਼ ਤੇ ਕਬੂਤਰਬਾਜ਼ ਸਨ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਅਖਾਣ/ਮੁਹਾਵਰੇ ਸੁਣਕੇ ਯੂਨੀਵਰਸਿਟੀਆਂ/ਕਾਲਜਾਂ ਦੇ ਪ੍ਰੋਫੈਸਰ ਅਤੇ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰ ਦੰਗ ਹੋ ਜਾਂਦੇ ਸਨ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਫੌਤਗੀ ਤੋਂ ਬਾਅਦ ਵੱਖ-ਵੱਖ ਰਾਜਸੀ, ਸਾਹਿਤਕ, ਸਭਿਆਚਾਰ, ਸਮਾਜਕ ਆਦਿ ਸੰਸਥਾਵਾਂ ਨੇ ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਸ਼ਰਧਾਜਾਲੀਆਂ ਦਿੱਤੀਆਂ ਅਤੇ ਸੋਗਮਈ ਮਤੇ ਵੀ ਪਾਏ ਗਏ। ਇਸ ਸੰਬੰਧੀ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਸਵੈ-ਜਾਚਨਾ ਦਾ ਵਰਣਨ ਇਸ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਰ ਹੈ:

ਸਭਨਾ ਨੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਆਤਮਾ ਦੀ ਸ਼ਾਤੀ ਲਈ ਅਤੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਸਵਰਗਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਨੇਕ ਰੂਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਹੱਥੋਂ ਪਾਕ ਸ਼ਰਾਬ ਪਿਲਾਉਣ ਲਈ ਤੇ ਮੌਜਾਂ ਮਾਰਨ ਲਈ ਰੱਬ ਸੱਚੇ ਅੱਗੇ ਅਰਦਾਸ ਕੀਤੀ। ਪਰ ਸਾਰਿਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਪਤਾ ਸੀ ਕਿ ਜਿਸ ਜੱਨਤ ਦੀ ਪੇਸ਼ਨਗੋਈ ਮੁਲਵਾਣੇ ਅਤੇ ਭਵਿੱਖਬਾਣੀ ਪੰਡਿਤ ਤੇ ਪੁਜਾਰੀ ਕਰਦੇ ਹਨ, ਉਹ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਕਦੇ ਵੀ ਨਹੀਂ ਮਿਲਣੀ। ਫਿਰ ਵੀ ਦੁਆ ਮੰਗਣ ਵਿਚ ਭਲਾ ਕਿਸੇ ਦਾ ਕੀ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਸੀ ਤੇ ਇਸ ਵਿਚ ਹਰਜ ਵੀ ਕੀ ਸੀ।⁷

'ਸੁਖਣ ਜਿਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦਾ ਹੋਵੇ ਦਾਰੂ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵਿਚ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀਆਂ ਵੱਖ-ਵੱਖ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਕੀਤੀਆਂ ਸਾਹਿਤਕ ਯਾਤਰਾਵਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਗੋਸ਼ਟੀਆਂ ਦਾ ਵਰਣਨ ਹੈ। ਉਸ ਨੇ ਸਾਹਿਤਕ ਯਾਤਰਾਵਾਂ ਦੀ ਸ਼ੁਰੂਆਤ ਪ੍ਰੀਤ ਨਗਰ ਅੰਮ੍ਰਿਤਸਰ ਤੋਂ ਕੀਤੀ, ਜਿਸ ਵਿਚ ਮੁਖਤਾਰ ਗਿੱਲ, ਡਾ. ਕਰਨੈਲ ਸਿੰਘ, ਗੁਲ ਚੌਹਾਨ, ਮੂਹਰਜੀਤ ਆਦਿ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰ ਸਾਥੀ ਜੁੜ ਦੇ ਗਏ। ਇਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ, ਇਹ ਸਾਹਿਤਕ ਯਾਤਰਾਵਾਂ ਦਾ ਸਫ਼ਰ ਜਲੰਧਰ, ਲੁਧਿਆਣਾ, ਚੰਡੀਗੜ੍ਹ ਅਤੇ

ਪਟਿਆਲਾ ਤੋਂ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੋਇਆ, ਦਿੱਲੀ ਵਿਚ ਅੰਮ੍ਰਿਤਾ ਪ੍ਰੀਤਮ, ਕਰਤਾਰ ਸਿੰਘ ਦੁੱਗਲ ਅਤੇ ਅਜੀਤ ਕੌਰ ਨਾਲ ਹੋਏ ਸਾਹਿਤਕ ਵਿਚਾਰ ਵਟਾਦਰਿਆਂ ਨਾਲ ਖ਼ਤਮ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਵਾਪਸੀ ਵੇਲੇ ਸਾਰੇ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰ ਸਾਥੀਆਂ ਕੋਲ ਜਮ੍ਹਾਂ ਪੂੰਜੀ ਦਾ ਵੀ ਭੰਗ ਪੈ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਸਿਰਫ਼ ਗੁਰਦੁਆਰੇ ਜਾਣ ਤੋਂ ਇਲਾਵਾ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਕੋਲ ਕੋਈ ਹੋਰ ਉਪਚਾਰਕਤਾ ਨਹੀਂ ਰਹਿੰਦੀ। ਇਹ ਸਲਾਹ ਵੀ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਦਿੱਤੀ, ਨਾਲ ਸਮਝਾਇਆ ਕਿ ਕੋਈ ਵੀ ਗੁਰਦੁਆਰੇ ਦੀ ਮਰਯਾਦਾ ਨੂੰ ਭੰਗ ਨਹੀਂ ਕਰੇਗਾ ਪਰ ਇਸ ਸਮੇਂ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਵਾਪਰੇ ਇਕ ਕਾਰਨਾਮੇ ਨੂੰ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਇੰਝ ਬਿਆਨ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ:

ਗੁਰਦੁਆਰੇ ਦੇ ਸੇਵਾਦਾਰਾਂ ਨੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਸਾਰਿਆਂ ਦਾ ਆਦਰ ਮਾਣ ਕੀਤਾ, ਪ੍ਰਸ਼ਾਦੇ ਛਕਾਏ, ਨਵੇਂ ਬਿਸਤਰੇ ਸੌਣ ਲਈ ਦਿੱਤੇ ਤੇ ਜਾਂਦੇ ਜਾਂਦੇ ਇੱਕ ਸੇਵਾਦਾਰ ਨੇ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੂੰ ਮੋਨਾ ਸਮਝ ਕੇ ਇਹ ਬੇਨਤੀ ਕੀਤੀ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਧੁਮਰਪਾਨ ਨਾ ਕਰੇ। ਰਾਤ ਬਾਰਾਂ ਵਜੇ ਮੂਹਰਜੀਤ ਨੂੰ ਅਮਲ ਚੜ੍ਹਿਆ ਤੇ ਉਹ ਸਿਗਰਟ ਸੁਲਗਾਣ ਲੱਗਾ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਹੱਥ 'ਚੋਂ ਸਿਗਰਟ ਖੋਲ੍ਹੀ ਤੇ ਮੂਹਰਜੀਤ ਨਾਲ ਕੌੜਾ ਬੋਲਣ ਲੱਗਾ। ਮੂਹਰਜੀਤ ਦਾ ਕਹਿਣਾ ਸੀ ਕਿ ਜੇ ਉਹ ਗੁਰਦੁਆਰੇ ਵਿੱਚ ਬਗ਼ਾਵਤ ਨਹੀਂ ਕਰੇਗਾ ਤਾਂ ਉਹ ਕਿਸ ਗੱਲ ਦਾ ਅਗਾਂਹਵਧੂ ਲਿਖਾਰੀ ਹੈ। ਦੋਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਝਪੱੜ ਦਾ ਇਹ ਸਿੱਟਾ ਨਿਕਲਿਆ ਕਿ ਰਾਤ ਨੂੰ ਸਾਰੇ ਗੁਰਦੁਆਰਾ ਛੱਡ ਕੇ ਪੈਦਲ ਪਹਾੜ ਗੰਜ ਦੇ ਇੱਕ ਹੋਟਲ ਵਿੱਚ ਰਾਤ ਗੁਜ਼ਾਰਨ ਲਈ ਪਹੁੰਚੇ।⁸

'ਦਿਲਗੀਰੀਆਂ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲਾ ਇਹ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵੀ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਬੋਟੇ ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦਾ ਉਗਰਵਾਦੀ ਗਤੀਵਿਧੀਆਂ ਵਿਚ ਹਿੱਸਾ ਲੈਣ ਕਰਕੇ ਹੋਈ ਸਜ਼ਾ ਨਾਲ ਸੰਬੰਧਤ ਹੈ। ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਪਹਿਲਾ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਦੀ ਸੰਗਰੂਰ ਜੇਲ੍ਹ ਵਿਚ ਅਤੇ ਫਿਰ ਰਾਜਸਥਾਨ ਦੀ ਜੋਧਪੁਰ ਜੇਲ੍ਹ ਵਿਚ ਰੱਖਿਆ ਗਿਆ। ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਮਿਲਣ ਲਈ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਪਤਨੀ ਅਤੇ ਧੀਆਂ ਜਾਂਦੀਆਂ ਰਹੀਆਂ। ਉਸ ਦੀ ਰਿਹਾਈ ਲਈ ਹਰ ਥਾਂ 'ਤੇ ਅਰਜ਼ੋਈਆਂ ਕੀਤੀਆਂ ਗਈਆਂ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਪ੍ਰਸੰਗਾਂ ਦੀ ਵਾਰਤਾ ਇਸ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਰ ਹੈ:

ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਸਿਹਤ ਠੀਕ ਸੀ ਤੇ ਉਸਦੇ ਚਿਹਰੇ ਦਾ ਰੰਗ ਨਿਖਰਿਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਸੀ।...ਰਾਤ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਜੋਧਪੁਰ ਕੱਟੀ ਤੇ ਦੂਜੇ ਦਿਨ ਅਜਮੇਰ-ਸ਼ਰੀਫ਼ ਵਿੱਚ ਦਰਗਾਹ ਦੀ ਜ਼ਿਆਰਤ ਕੀਤੀ।...ਦਿੱਲੀ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਖਵਾਜ਼ਾ ਨਿਜ਼ਾਮ-ਉ-ਦੀਨ ਦੀ ਦਰਗਾਹ 'ਤੇ ਹਾਜ਼ਰੀ ਦਿੱਤੀ ਤੇ ਚੋਖੇ ਚਿਰ ਤਕ ਅਮੀਰ ਖੁਸਰੋ ਦੇ ਮਜ਼ਾਰ 'ਤੇ ਬੈਠੇ ਰਹੇ। ਜਦਕਿ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਬੀਵੀ ਤੇ ਬੱਚੀ, ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਦੀ ਰਿਹਾਈ ਲਈ ਦੁਆ ਮੰਗਦੀਆਂ ਰਹੀਆਂ। ਦਰਗਾਹ 'ਤੇ ਮੰਗਣ ਵਾਲੇ ਸੌ-ਡੇਢ ਸੌ ਮੰਗਤਿਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਨੇ ਰੋਟੀ ਖੁਵਾਈ...ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਤੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਪਤਨੀ ਨੇ ਸਤਵਾਰੀ ਵਾਲੇ ਪੀਰ ਬਾਬਾ ਬੁੱਢਣ ਸ਼ਾਹ, ਰਾਮ ਨਗਰ ਦੇ ਮੋੜਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਪੰਜ ਪੀਰ ਅਤੇ ਗੁੰਮਟ ਦੇ ਨੌ ਗਜ਼ੀਏ ਪੀਰ ਦੀ ਦਰਗਾਹਵਾਂ 'ਤੇ ਜਾਣ ਦਾ ਸਿਲਸਿਲਾ ਜਾਰੀ ਰੱਖਿਆ ਤੇ ਉਥੇ ਮੰਗਤਿਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਛੋਲਿਆਂ ਵਾਲੇ ਚੌਲ ਖੁਵਾਉਣ ਤੇ ਪੈਸੇ ਵੰਡਣਾ ਜਾਰੀ ਰੱਖਿਆ। ਇੰਝ ਹੀ ਦੋਵੇਂ ਰਘੂਨਾਥ ਮੰਦਿਰ ਤੇ ਰਣਵੇਸ਼ਵਰ ਮੰਦਿਰ ਦੇ ਬਾਹਰ ਬੈਠੇ ਮੰਗਤਿਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਪੈਸੇ ਵੰਡਦੇ ਰਹਿੰਦੇ ਤਾਂ ਜੋ ਜ਼ਾਕਿਰ ਦੇ ਮਾੜੇ ਗ੍ਰਹਿ ਖਤਮ ਹੋਣ।⁹

ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਉਪਰੋਕਤ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਾਂ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਸੰਵਾਦ ਪੂਰਨ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਪੜਚੋਲਦਿਆਂ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਦ੍ਰਿਸ਼ਟੀ ਪ੍ਰਤੀ ਪਹਿਲੀ ਰਾਇ ਇਹ ਬਣਦੀ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਵੱਖ-ਵੱਖ ਧਰਮਾਂ ਦੀ ਪੁਜਾਰੀ ਸ਼੍ਰੇਣੀ ਪ੍ਰਤੀ ਆਲੋਚਨਾਤਮਕ ਨਜ਼ਰੀਆ ਰੱਖਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਆਲੋਚਨਾਤਮਕ ਰਵੱਈਏ ਪਿੱਛੇ ਉਸ ਦੀ ਚੇਤਨਾ ਅਤੇ ਜਗਿਆਸੂ ਦ੍ਰਿਸ਼ਟੀ ਕਾਰਜਸ਼ੀਲ ਹੈ, ਜਿਹੜੀ ਉਸ ਪੁਜਾਰੀ ਵਰਗ ਦੇ ਕਥਨ ਅਤੇ ਕਾਰਜ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਅੰਤਰ ਨੂੰ ਬਾਖ਼ੂਬੀ ਪਛਾਣਦੀ ਹੈ। ਦੂਸਰੀ; ਇਹ ਕਿ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਵੱਖ-ਵੱਖ ਧਰਮਾਂ ਪ੍ਰਤੀ ਸਤਿਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਭਾਵਨਾ ਰੱਖਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਲਈ ਉਹ ਉਦਾਰਵਾਦੀ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਦੇ ਸੰਚਾਲਕ ਦੇ ਤੌਰ 'ਤੇ ਭੂਮਿਕਾ ਨਿਭਾਉਂਦਾ ਨਜ਼ਰ ਆਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ ਅਤੇ ਤੀਸਰੀ; ਇਹ ਕਿ ਜਿਥੇ ਉਹ ਵਸ਼ਿਸ਼ਟ ਧਰਮਾਂ ਪ੍ਰਤੀ ਨਿਰਪੱਖਤਾ ਵਾਲੀ ਦ੍ਰਿਸ਼ਟੀ ਨੂੰ ਅਪਣਾਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ, ਉਥੇ ਉਹ ਲੋਕ-ਧਰਮ ਅੰਦਰਲੀਆਂ ਅਨੁਸ਼ਠਾਨ ਪ੍ਰਕਿਰਿਆਵਾਂ ਦੇ ਅਮਲ ਨੂੰ ਵੀ ਪਰਿਵਾਰਕ ਜੀਵਨ ਵਿਚ ਸੰਤੁਲਨ ਬਣਾਈ ਰੱਖਣ ਲਈ ਵਰਤੋਂ ਵਿਚ ਲਿਆਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਥੇ ਇਸ ਗੱਲ ਦਾ ਜ਼ਿਕਰ ਕਰਨਾ ਵੀ ਜ਼ਰੂਰੀ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਅਨੁਸ਼ਠਾਨ

ਪ੍ਰਕਿਰਿਆਵਾਂ ਦੇ ਅਮਲ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਹੋਰ (others) ਦੇ ਜਾਨੀ-ਮਾਲੀ ਨੁਕਸਾਨ ਵਾਲੀਆਂ ਪ੍ਰਕਿਰਿਆਵਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਨਹੀਂ ਚੁਣਦਾ। ਇਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ, ਭਾਵੇਂ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਧਰਮ ਦੇ ਅਲੰਬਰਦਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਤਾਂ ਵਿਥ 'ਤੇ ਖੜ੍ਹ ਕੇ ਵੇਖਦਾ ਹੈ ਪਰ ਉਹ ਕਿਸੇ ਵੀ ਧਰਮ ਅਤੇ ਲੋਕ-ਧਰਮ ਤੋਂ ਵਿਥ ਨਹੀਂ ਬਣਾਉਂਦਾ, ਸਗੋਂ ਇਕ ਚੰਗੇ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਵਾਲੇ ਸੰਵਾਹਕ ਦਾ ਕਾਰਜ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੋਇਆ ਮਨੁੱਖੀ ਜੀਵਨ ਦੀਆਂ ਪ੍ਰਕਿਰਿਆਵਾਂ ਦੇ ਵਹਿਣ ਦੇ ਨਾਲ-ਨਾਲ ਚੱਲਦਾ ਅਤੇ ਵਿਕਾਸ ਕਰਦਾ ਪ੍ਰਤੀਤ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ।

II

ਉੱਨੀ ਸੌ ਸੰਤਾਲੀ ਦੀ ਅਧੋਗਤੀ ਵਿਚ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਦੇ ਮਰਦ ਮੈਂਬਰਾਂ ਦਾ ਕਤਲ ਹੋ ਚੁੱਕਿਆ ਸੀ। ਸਾਰੀ ਘਰ ਗ੍ਰਹਿਸਤੀ ਮਨੁੱਖੀ ਨਫਰਤ ਦੀ ਅੱਗ ਵਿਚ ਢਹਿ-ਢੇਰੀ ਹੋ ਚੁੱਕੀ ਸੀ। ਘਰ-ਮਕਾਨ ਅੱਗ ਦਿਆਂ ਭਾਂਬੜਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਜਲ ਕੇ ਰਾਖ ਅਤੇ ਖੋਲ੍ਹੇ ਬਣ ਚੁੱਕੇ ਸਨ। ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਨੂੰ ਆਪਣੇ ਘਰ-ਵਾਰ ਛੱਡ ਕੇ ਜੰਗਲਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਰਫ਼ਿਊਜੀ ਕੈਂਪਾਂ ਦਾ ਓਟ-ਆਸਰਾ ਲੈਣਾ ਪਿਆ। ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਘਰ ਦੇ ਜੀਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਗੁਆਉਣ ਦੇ ਨਾਲ-ਨਾਲ ਆਰਥਕ ਪੱਖੋਂ ਵੀ ਪੂਰੀ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਡਾਵਾਢੇਲੇ ਹੋ ਚੁੱਕਿਆ ਸੀ। ਘਰ-ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਦੀ ਗੁਜ਼ਰ-ਬਸਰ ਲਈ ਹੱਥੀ ਮਿਹਨਤ ਤੋਂ ਬਿਨਾਂ ਕਿਸੇ ਵੀ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਹੋਰ ਸਾਧਨ-ਸਰੋਤ ਦਾ ਕੋਈ ਆਸਰਾ ਵੀ ਨਹੀਂ ਸੀ। ਇਥੇ ਅਸੀਂ ਇਹ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਗੇ ਕਿ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਆਰਥਕ ਮੰਦਗਾਲੀ ਭਰੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਕਿਵੇਂ ? ਅਤੇ ਕਿੰਨਾਂ ? ਪਰਿਸਥਿਤੀਆਂ ਰਾਹੀਂ ਗੁਜ਼ਰ ਕੇ ਸਫਲਤਾ ਵੱਲ ਦੀ ਯਾਤਰਾ ਤੈਹ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਹ ਪ੍ਰਮੁੱਖ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਇਸ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਰ ਹਨ:

'ਅੱਗ ਦੀ ਨਦੀ ਦੇ ਤਾਰੂ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਦੀ ਵਿਆਖਿਆਕਾਰ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਵੱਡੀ ਭੈਣ ਜ਼ੁਬੇਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਵਿਚ ਸੰਤਾਲੀ ਦੇ ਉਜਾੜੇ ਤੋਂ ਬਾਅਦ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਮੁੱਢਲੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਵਿਚ ਆਏ ਆਰਥਕ ਸੰਕਟਾਂ ਦੇ ਪ੍ਰਭਾਵਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਗੁਜ਼ਰਨ ਦਾ ਵਰਣਨ ਹੈ। ਉਸ ਦਾ ਉਲੇਖ ਇਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਹੈ:

ਬਾਪ ਦੀ ਫੈਮਲੀ ਪੈਨਸ਼ਨ, ਜੀ.ਪੀ. ਫੰਡ ਅਤੇ ਇੰਸ਼ੋਰੈਂਸ ਕਲੇਮ ਦੀ ਰਕਮ ਮਿਲਣ ਨਾਲ ਘਰ ਗ੍ਰਹਿਸਤੀ ਚੱਲਣ ਲੱਗੀ। ਮਾਂ ਸੀਣ ਪਰੋਣ ਦਾ ਕੰਮ ਜਾਣਦੀ ਸੀ, ਉਸਨੇ ਇੱਕ ਮਸ਼ੀਨ ਖਰੀਦ ਲਈ ਤੇ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਦੇ ਕੱਪੜੇ ਸੀਣ ਲੱਗੀ ਤੇ ਸਾਨੂੰ ਪਾਲਣ ਲੱਗੀ।...ਲੋਕਾਂ ਦੀ ਬੁਰੀ ਨਜ਼ਰ ਤੋਂ ਬਚਣ ਲਈ ਤੇ ਬੱਚਿਆਂ ਲਈ ਇਕ ਸਹਾਰਾ ਲੱਭਣ ਲਈ ਉਨ੍ਹੇ ਵਿਆਹ ਕਰਵਾ ਲਿਆ...ਜਦੋਂ ਮੈਂ ਦਸਵੀਂ ਜਮਾਤ ਪਾਸ ਕੀਤੀ ਤਾਂ ਮੈਂ ਵੀ ਟੀਚਰ ਲੱਗ ਗਈ ਤੇ ਮੇਰੀ ਕਮਾਈ ਨਾਲ ਸਾਡਾ ਜੀਵਨ ਸੌਖਿਆਂ ਗੁਜ਼ਰਨ ਲੱਗਾ। ਸਾਡਾ ਮਤਰਿਆ ਪਿਓ, ਮਾਂ ਦੀਆਂ ਉਮੀਦਾਂ 'ਤੇ ਪੂਰਾ ਨਹੀਂ ਉਤਰਿਆ...ਗੱਲ ਗੱਲ ਪਿੱਛੇ ਉਸਦੀ ਮਤਰੇਈ ਰਗ ਫੜਕਣ ਲੱਗਦੀ।...ਉਸਦੇ ਚਲਾਨਾ ਕਰਨ ਮਗਰੋਂ ਉਹ ਦੋ ਬੱਚੇ ਵੀ ਸਾਨੂੰ ਹੀ ਪਾਲਣੇ ਪਏ ਕਿਉਂਕਿ ਉਹ ਸਾਡੇ ਮਾਂ-ਜਾਏ ਸਨ...ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ...ਪੜ੍ਹਨ ਲਿਖਣ ਵਿਚ ਹੁਸ਼ਿਆਰ। ਦਸ ਜਮਾਤਾਂ ਪਾਸ ਕਰਨ ਮਗਰੋਂ ਉਸਨੂੰ ਵੀ ਕਲਰਕ ਦੀ ਸਰਕਾਰੀ ਨੌਕਰੀ ਮਿਲ ਗਈ। ਇੰਝ ਸਾਡੀ ਗ੍ਰਹਿਸਤੀ ਵਾਹ-ਵਾਹ ਚੱਲਣ ਲੱਗੀ।...ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਆਪਣੀ ਕਮਾਈ ਨਾਲ ਮਾਂ, ਵੱਡੇ ਭਰਾ ਇਸਹਾਕ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਜਿਹੜਾ ਇੱਕ ਹਿਸਾਬ ਨਾਲ ਵਿਕਲਾਂਗ ਸੀ ਅਤੇ ਮਤਰੇਏ ਭੈਣ-ਭਰਾ ਨੂੰ ਪਾਲਣ ਲੱਗਾ।¹⁰

'ਯਾਦਾਂ ਦੇ ਰੰਗ ਗੂੜ੍ਹੇ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਉਪ-ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤ ਵਿਚ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਵਿਆਹੁਤਾ ਜੀਵਨ ਗ੍ਰਹਿਸਤੀ ਵਿਚ ਬੱਝਣ ਦੀ ਵਿਥੀਆਂ ਅੰਕਿਤ ਹੈ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਖੁਸ਼ੀ ਦੇ ਪਲਾਂ ਸਮੇਂ ਵਿਚ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਦੋਸਤਾਂ ਨੇ ਖੂਬ ਆਨੰਦ ਮਾਣਿਆ। ਵਿਆਹ ਦੇ ਤੀਜੇ ਸਾਲ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਘਰ ਇਕ ਬੇਟੀ ਨੇ ਜਨਮ ਲਿਆ ਤਾਂ ਹੋਰ ਆਰਥਕ ਚਿੰਤਾਵਾਂ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਇਰਦ-ਗਿਰਦ ਘੁੰਮਣ ਲੱਗੀਆਂ, ਕਿਉਂਕਿ ਉਹ ਘਰ ਵਿਚ ਇੱਕਲਾ ਕਮਾਉ ਸੀ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਆਰਥਕ ਤੰਗੀਆਂ-ਤਰੁਸੀਆਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਨਿਕਲਣ ਲਈ ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਹੋਰ ਸੰਘਰਸ਼ ਕਰਨਾ ਪਿਆ। ਜਿਸ ਦਾ ਵਰਣਨ ਇਸ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਰ ਹੈ:

ਉਸਨੇ ਮੁੜ ਪੜ੍ਹਨ ਦਾ ਫੈਸਲਾ ਕੀਤਾ ਤੇ ਉਰਦੂ ਵਿੱਚ ਅਦੀਬ ਮਾਹਿਰ ਤੇ ਅਦੀਬ ਫਾਜ਼ਿਲ ਦੇ ਇਮਤਿਹਾਨ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਯੂਨੀਵਰਸਿਟੀ ਤੋਂ ਪਾਸ ਕੀਤੇ।...1970 ਤਕ ਉਸਨੇ ਬੀ.ਏ ਪਾਸ ਕਰ ਲਈ ਤੇ 1972 ਵਿੱਚ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰੀ ਵਿੱਚ ਡਿਪਲੋਮਾ ਕਰ ਲਿਆ। ਉਹ ਪਾਰਟ ਟਾਈਮ ਵਜੋਂ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਵੀ ਕੰਮ ਕਰਦਾ

ਰਿਹਾ ਤਾਂ ਜੋ ਗ੍ਰਹਿਸਤੀ ਸੁਖਾਲੀ ਰਵੇ। ਉਸਨੇ ਆਪਣੀ ਮਤਰੇਈ ਭੈਣ ਤੇ ਭਰਾ ਦਾ ਵਿਆਹ ਕਰਵਾਇਆ ਤੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਘਰ ਬਣਾਨ ਵਿੱਚ ਪੂਰੀ ਸਹਾਇਤਾ ਦਿੱਤੀ। ਉਸਨੇ ਜੰਮੂ ਵਿੱਚ 'ਰੋਜ਼ਾਨਾ ਸੰਦੇਸ਼', 'ਅਮਾਰਤ' ਅਤੇ 'ਵਕਤ' ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਐਡਿਟ ਕੀਤਾ ਤੇ ਸ਼੍ਰੀਨਗਰ ਵਿੱਚ 'ਹਮਦਰਦ', 'ਰੋਸ਼ਨੀ', 'ਜ਼ਿੰਮੀਦਾਰ' ਅਤੇ 'ਪੋਲੀਟੀਕਲ ਟਾਈਮਜ਼' ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਐਡਿਟ ਕੀਤਾ।¹¹

'ਮੇਲੇ ਸੱਜਣਾਂ ਦੇ' ਨਿਬੰਧ ਵਿਚ ਇਹ ਦਰਸਾਇਆ ਗਿਆ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੂੰ ਆਪਣੇ ਮਿੱਤਰਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਕੁਲੀਗਜ਼ ਕੋਲੋਂ ਹਮੇਸ਼ਾ ਸਹਿਯੋਗ ਅਤੇ ਮਦਦ ਮਿਲਦੀ ਰਹੀ। ਇਹ ਦੋਸਤੀਆਂ ਉਸ ਦੀ ਜ਼ਿੰਦਗੀ ਦਾ ਕਮਾਇਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਸ਼ਰਮਾਇਆ ਹਨ, ਜਿਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੇ ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਗੁਰਬਤ ਭਰੀ ਜ਼ਿੰਦਗੀ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਬਾਹਰ ਕੱਢਿਆ। ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਦੇ ਸਾਰੇ ਪਾਠਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਪੜ੍ਹਦਿਆਂ ਕਿਤੇ ਵੀ ਇਹ ਦੇਖਣ ਨੂੰ ਨਹੀਂ ਮਿਲਿਆ ਕਿ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਨੇ ਕਿਸੇ ਆਪਣੇ ਮਿੱਤਰ ਜਾਂ ਕੁਲੀਗਜ਼ ਨੂੰ ਸਬਕ ਸਿਖਾਉਣ ਲਈ ਕੋਈ ਸ਼ਾਜਿਸ਼ ਰਚੀ ਹੋਵੇ। ਉਸ ਨੇ ਜੋ ਕੁਝ ਵੀ ਬੋਲਿਆ ਪਿੱਠ ਪਿਛੇ ਨਹੀਂ ਮੂੰਹ 'ਤੇ ਬੋਲਿਆ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਦੋਸਤਾਂ ਵਲੋਂ ਮਿਲੇ ਸਹਿਯੋਗ ਨੂੰ ਹਰਭਜਨ ਸਾਗਰ ਦੇ ਹਵਾਲੇ ਨਾਲ ਇੰਝ ਵਰਣਿਤ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ:

ੳ. ਮੈਨੂੰ ਯਾਦ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਸਦੇ ਪਹਿਲੇ ਮਹੀਨੇ ਦੀ ਫ਼ੀਸ ਵੀ ਸ਼ਸ਼ੀ ਕਾਂਤ ਸ਼ਰਮਾ ਨੇ ਦਿੱਤੀ ਸੀ, ਨਾਲੇ ਉਹ ਆਪਣੇ ਨੋਟਸ ਵੀ ਉਸਨੂੰ ਦਿੰਦਾ ਸੀ ਤਾਂ ਜੋ ਉਸਨੂੰ ਬਹੁਤੀ ਮਿਹਨਤ ਨਾ ਕਰਨੀ ਪਵੇ। ਪੂਰਾ ਇੱਕ ਸਾਲ ਉਹ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦਾ ਪਹਿਰਾ ਦਿੰਦਾ ਰਿਹਾ ਤਾਂ ਜੋ ਉਹ ਕਾਲਜੋਂ ਖਿਸਕ ਕੇ ਫ਼ਿਲਮ ਦੇਖਣ ਨਾ ਚਲੇ ਜਾਏ।¹²

ਅ. ਮਿਰਜ਼ਾ ਅਫ਼ਜ਼ਲ ਬੇਗ ਨੂੰ ਇਕ ਅਜਿਹੇ ਪੀ.ਏ ਦੀ ਲੋੜ ਸੀ ਜਿਹੜਾ ਅੰਗਰੇਜ਼ੀ, ਹਿੰਦੀ, ਉਰਦੂ ਤੋਂ ਛੁੱਟ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰੀ, ਡੋਗਰੀ ਤੇ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਵੀ ਪੜ੍ਹ ਲਿਖ ਤੇ ਬੋਲ ਸਕਦਾ ਹੋਵੇ। ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਇਸ ਗੱਲ ਲਈ ਸੈਕਟਰੀ ਕਲਚਰਲ ਅਕੈਡਮੀ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਯੂਸਫ਼ ਟੈਂਗ ਨੂੰ ਕਿਹਾ ਤਾਂ ਉਸਨੇ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਨਾਂ ਦੀ ਦੱਸ ਪਾਈ। ਬੇਗ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਨੇ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਦਾ ਇੰਟਰਵਿਊ ਲਿਆ ਤੇ ਉਸਨੂੰ ਅੰਗਰੇਜ਼ੀ ਦੀਆਂ ਕੁੱਝ ਲਾਈਨਾਂ ਦਾ ਉਰਦੂ ਵਿੱਚ ਤਰਜੁਮਾ ਕਰਨ ਲਈ ਦਿੱਤਾ। ਇੰਝ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਟੈਸਟ 'ਚੋਂ ਪਾਸ ਹੋ ਗਿਆ ਤੇ ਚਾਰ ਸਾਲ ਤਕ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਕੰਮ ਕਰਦਾ ਰਿਹਾ।¹³

ੲ. ਇੰਦਰਾ ਗਾਧੀ ਨੇ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਵਿਚ ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਖੇਡਣ ਦੇ ਨਾਲ ਨਾਲ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿੱਚ ਵੀ ਫ਼ਾਰੂਕ ਅਬਦੁੱਲੇ ਦੀ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਨੂੰ ਖਤਮ ਕਰਨ ਲਈ ਭੰਡੀ ਪ੍ਰਚਾਰ ਕਰਨਾ ਸ਼ੁਰੂ ਕਰ ਦਿੱਤਾ। ਦਿੱਲੀ ਤੇ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਦੀਆਂ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਆਏ ਦਿਨ ਫ਼ਾਰੂਕ ਅਬਦੁੱਲਾ ਨੂੰ ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨੀ ਏਜੰਟ ਸਾਬਿਤ ਕੀਤਾ ਜਾਣ ਲੱਗਾ।...ਅਜਿਹੇ ਹਲਾਤਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਫ਼ਾਰੂਕ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਨੇ ਫੈਸਲਾ ਕੀਤਾ ਕਿ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਵਿੱਚ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਇਨਫਾਰਮੇਸ਼ਨ ਬਿਊਰੋ ਵਿਖੇ ਕੋਈ ਐਸਾ ਅਫ਼ਸਰ ਨਿਯੁਕਤ ਕੀਤਾ ਜਾਏ ਜਿਸ ਦੀ ਨੇੜਤਾ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਦੇ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਹੋਵੇ। ਜਦ ਅਜਿਹੇ ਅਫ਼ਸਰ ਦੀ ਭਾਲ ਕਰਨ ਲੱਗੇ ਤਾਂ ਸੂਚਨਾ ਮੰਤਰੀ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਸ਼ਫੀ ਊੜੀ ਹੋਰਾਂ ਫ਼ਾਰੂਕ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਨੂੰ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦਾ ਨਾਂ ਤਜਵੀਜ਼ ਕੀਤਾ। ਉਹ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੂੰ ਇੱਕ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰ ਵਜੋਂ ਤੇ ਇੱਕ ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰ ਵਜੋਂ ਚੰਗੀ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਜਾਣਦੇ ਸਨ।¹⁴

ਇੰਝ, ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਇਕ ਕਲਰਕ ਦੇ ਤੌਰ 'ਤੇ ਨੌਕਰੀ-ਪੇਸ਼ੇ ਵਾਲਾ ਜੀਵਨ ਸ਼ੁਰੂ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ ਅਤੇ ਆਪਣੇ ਦੋਸਤਾਂ, ਮਿੱਤਰਾਂ ਦੇ ਸਹਿਯੋਗ ਨਾਲ ਪੀ.ਅਰ.ਓ. ਅਸਿਸਟੈਂਟ ਕਮਿਸ਼ਨਰ ਡਿਪਾਲੋਪਮੈਂਟ, ਡਾਇਰੈਕਟਰ ਇੰਪਲਾਈਮੈਂਟ, ਐੱਮ. ਡੀ, ਐੱਸ.ਸੀ, ਐੱਸ.ਟੀ. ਕਾਰਪੋਰੇਸ਼ਨ ਰਿਹਾ, ਖੇਤੀਬਾੜੀ ਯੂਨੀਵਰਸਿਟੀ ਦਾ ਪਹਿਲਾ ਰਜਿਸਟਰਾਰ, ਮਹਿਕਮਾ ਖੁਰਾਕ ਦਾ ਸਪੈਸ਼ਲ ਸੈਕਟਰੀ, ਐਡਿਸ਼ਨਲ ਡਿਪਟੀ ਕਮਿਸ਼ਨਰ ਤੇ ਕਲੈਕਟਰ ਜੰਮੂ ਦੇ ਅਹੁਦਿਆਂ ਤੱਕ ਪਹੁੰਚਦਾ ਹੈ। ਅਗਰ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਦੇ ਇਸ ਸਫ਼ਰ ਨੂੰ ਇਕ ਵਿਅਕਤੀਗਤ ਤੌਰ 'ਤੇ ਦੇਖੀਏ ਤਾਂ ਮੇਰੀ ਨਿੱਜੀ ਰਾਇ ਮੁਤਬਕ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਮਿਹਨਤ, ਲਗਨ, ਇਮਾਨਦਾਰੀ, ਚੰਗਾ ਆਚਰਣ ਅਤੇ ਲਿਆਕਤ ਉਸ ਦੀ ਸਫ਼ਲਤਾ ਦਾ ਵੱਡਾ ਕਾਰਨ ਜਾਪਦੇ ਹਨ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਦੀ ਸ਼ਖ਼ਸੀਅਤ ਦਾ ਇਕ ਵੱਡਾਪਣ ਇਹ ਵੀ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਧਰਮ ਅਤੇ ਜਾਤ ਦੀਆਂ ਵਲਗਣਾਂ ਤੋਂ ਮੁਕਤ ਹੈ। ਇਸੇ ਕਰਕੇ ਸ਼ਸ਼ੀ ਕਾਂਤ ਸ਼ਰਮਾ ਵਰਗੇ ਲੋਕ ਉਸ ਦੀਆਂ ਬਾਹਵਾਂ ਬਣਦੇ ਹਨ। ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਇਕ ਥਾਂ ਲਿਖਦਾ ਹੈ ਕਿ “...ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ...ਕਿਸੇ ਸਕੂਲ ਜਾਂ ਯੂਨੀਵਰਸਿਟੀ ਤੋਂ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਨਹੀਂ ਪੜ੍ਹੀ ਸੀ। ਉਸ ਨੇ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਭਾਸ਼ਾ ਉਸਤਾਦ ਮੁਹੱਲੇ ਦੇ ਕਾਮਗਰ ਜਿਵੇਂ ਲੋਹਾਰ, ਤਰਖਾਣ, ਪਾਂਡੀ, ਕੋਚਵਾਨ, ਨਾਈ ਅਤੇ ਕਸਾਈ ਵਰਗ ਦੇ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਕੋਲੋਂ ਵੀ ਸਿੱਖੀ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ

ਲੋਕਾਂ ਦੀ ਭਾਸ਼ਾ ਵਿਚ ਕਿਸੇ ਹੋਰ ਬੋਲੀ ਦੀ ਰੱਲਤ ਨਹੀਂ ਅਤੇ ਨਾ ਹੀ ਔਖੇ ਸ਼ਬਦਾਂ ਦਾ ਰੱਲਾਅ।”¹⁵ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਅਜਿਹੇ ਨਿੱਕੇ-ਨਿੱਕੇ ਵੇਰਵੇ ਉਸ ਦੀ ਭਾਈਚਾਰਕ ਸਾਂਝ ਅਤੇ ਸਾਰੇ ਵਰਗਾਂ ਨਾਲ ਅਪਣੱਤ ਦੀ ਸਾਹਦੀ ਭਰਦੇ ਹਨ। ਇਥੇ ਇਹ ਗੱਲ ਵੀ ਉਲੇਖਯੋਗ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਸਵੈ-ਜੀਵਨੀ ਨੂੰ ਪੜ੍ਹਦਿਆਂ ਕਿਤੇ ਵੀ ਅਜਿਹਾ ਕੋਈ ਸੁਚੇਤ ਜਾਂ ਅਚੇਤ ਰੂਪ ਵਿਚ ਸਿਰਜਿਆ ਪ੍ਰਸੰਗ ਸਾਹਮਣੇ ਨਹੀਂ ਆਉਂਦਾ ਜਿਸ ਵਿਚ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਮਜ਼ਾਕ ਜਾਂ ਤ੍ਰਿਸਕਾਰ ਦੇ ਪਾਤਰ ਬਣਾਇਆ ਗਿਆ ਹੋਵੇ। ਨੌਕਰੀ-ਪੇਸ਼ੇ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਆਈਆਂ ਮੁਸ਼ਕਲਾਂ ਦਾ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਡਟਕੇ ਮੁਕਾਬਲਾ ਕੀਤਾ। ਵਲੀ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਬੱਟ ਦੇ ਹਵਾਲੇ ਨਾਲ ਉਹ ਲਿਖਦਾ ਹੈ ਕਿ “ਮਿਲੀਟੈਂਸੀ ਦੇ ਉਸ ਝੱਖੜ ਵਿੱਚ ਵੀ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਬਲਾਕਾਂ, ਪੰਚਾਇਤਾਂ ਤੇ ਪਿੰਡਾਂ ਦੇ ਦੌਰੇ ਕਰਦਾ ਰਹਿੰਦਾ ਤੇ ਕਹਿੰਦਾ ਜਿਹੜੀ ਗੋਲੀ ਉਸ ਲਈ ਬਣੀ ਹੈ ਉਹ ਉਸਨੂੰ ਜ਼ਰੂਰ ਲੱਗੇਗੀ ਅਤੇ ਜਿਹੜੀ ਨਹੀਂ ਬਣੀ ਉਹ ਕਦੇ ਉਸਨੂੰ ਵੱਜ ਹੀ ਨਹੀਂ ਸਕਦੀ। ਬਾਕੀ ਜ਼ਿੰਦਗੀ ਤੇ ਮੌਤ ਰੱਬ ਦੇ ਹੱਥ ਵਿਚ ਹੈ।”¹⁶ ਇਉਂ, ਅਜਿਹੇ ਪ੍ਰਸੰਗ ਜਿਥੇ ਮਨੁੱਖ ਨੂੰ ਆਪਣੀ ਡਿਊਟੀ ਦੀ ਜ਼ਿੰਮੇਵਾਰੀ ਨੂੰ ਇਮਾਨਦਾਰੀ ਨਾਲ ਨਿਭਾਉਣ ਦਾ ਸੁਨੇਹਾ ਦਿੰਦੇ ਹਨ, ਉਥੇ ਇਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਦਾ ਆਤਮਬਲ ਹੀ ਫਿਰਕਾਪ੍ਰਸਤੀ ਵਾਲੀਆਂ ਤਾਕਤਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਬਲਹੀਣ ਵੀ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਥੇ ਇਹ ਗੱਲ ਵੀ ਵਿਚਾਰਨਯੋਗ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਾਦੀ ਵਿਚ ਫੈਲੇ ਹੋਏ ਮੌਤ ਦੇ ਆਂਤਕੀ ਵਾਤਾਵਰਣ ਦਾ ਦ੍ਰਿਸ਼ ਤਾਂ ਸਿਰਜਦਾ ਹੈ ਪਰ ਉਸ ਅੱਗੇ ਸਿਰ ਨਹੀਂ ਝੁਕਾਉਂਦਾ। ਉਸ ਦਾ ਲਿਖਿਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਇਹ ਵਾਕ ਕਿ 'ਬਾਕੀ ਜ਼ਿੰਦਗੀ ਤੇ ਮੌਤ ਰੱਬ ਦੇ ਹੱਥ ਵਿਚ ਹੈ।' ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਭਾਰਤੀ/ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਸੂਫ਼ੀਆਂ ਦੀ ਕਤਾਰ ਵਿਚ ਖੜ੍ਹਾ ਕਰ ਦਿੰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਜ਼ਿੰਦਗੀ ਜਿਊਣ ਦਾ ਇਹ ਫਲਸਫ਼ਾ ਇਸ ਜੀਵਨ ਗਾਥਾ ਦੇ ਸਾਰੇ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕ ਚਿਤਰਪਟ ਉੱਤੇ ਕਿਸੇ ਨਾ ਕਿਸੇ ਰੂਪ ਵਿਚ ਪਸਰਿਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਹੈ।

III

ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਨੇ ਆਪਣੀ ਇਸ ਹੱਡਬੀਤੀ ਵਿਚ ਰਾਸ਼ਟਰੀ ਅਤੇ ਅੰਤਰ-ਰਾਸ਼ਟਰੀ ਪੱਧਰ ਦੀ ਸਿਆਸਤ ਦੇ ਜਿਹੜੇ ਵੇਰਵੇ ਪੇਸ਼ ਕੀਤੇ ਹਨ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਪੜ੍ਹਕੇ ਬਹੁਤ ਸਾਰੇ ਸਵਾਲ ਪਾਠਕ ਦੀ ਮਨੋਸਥਿਤੀ ਨੂੰ ਹਲੂਣਦੇ ਹਨ। ਤਕਨੋਲੋਜੀ ਦੇ ਯੁੱਗ ਵਿਚ ਸਿਆਸਤ ਦੀਆਂ ਅਜਿਹੀਆਂ ਕੋਈਆਂ ਚਾਲਾਂ ਫ਼ਿਲਮਾਂ ਜਾਂ ਸੀਰੀਅਲਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਤਾਂ ਦੇਖਣ ਨੂੰ ਮਿਲਦੀਆਂ ਹਨ। ਪਰ ਕਿਸੇ ਵਿਅਕਤੀ ਵਿਸ਼ੇਸ਼ ਦੁਆਰਾ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਗੱਲਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਨਿੱਜੀ ਅਨੁਭਵਾਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਉਘਾੜਨਾ ਤੱਥ ਅਤੇ ਸੱਚ ਦਾ ਸੁਮੇਲ ਕਰਵਾਉਂਦੀਆਂ ਹਨ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਦੁਆਰਾ ਦਿੱਤੇ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਮੁੱਲਵਾਨ ਵੇਰਵਿਆਂ ਬਾਰੇ ਟਿੱਪਣੀ ਕਰਦਿਆਂ ਡਾ. ਰਾਜਿੰਦਰ ਪਾਲ ਸਿੰਘ ਬਰਾੜ ਲਿਖਦੇ ਹਨ:

ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਕੇਵਲ ਦੋ ਦੇਸ਼ਾਂ ਵਿਚਕਾਰ ਹੀ ਨਹੀਂ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਸਗੋਂ ਇਕੋ ਦੇਸ਼ ਇਕੋ ਪਾਰਟੀ ਇਕੋ ਪਰਿਵਾਰ ਵਿਚ ਵੀ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਨੂੰ ਖੇਡਣ ਵਾਲਿਆਂ ਦਾ ਚਿਹਰਾ ਬੜਾ ਗਿਰਗਟੀ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਆਪਣੇ ਅਹੁਦੇ ਅਤੇ ਸੁਭਾਅ ਕਾਰਨ ਉਹ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ॥ ਕਈ ਸਿਆਸੀ ਪਰਿਵਾਰਾਂ ਦੇ ਨੇੜੇ ਰਿਹਾ ਹੋਣ ਕਰਕੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਅੰਦਰੂਨੀ ਕਲੇਸ਼ ਨੂੰ ਜਾਣਦਾ ਸੀ। ਉਸ ਨੇ ਇਸ ਅੰਦਰੂਨੀ ਕਾਟੋ ਕਲੇਸ਼ ਨੂੰ ਬੜੀ ਬੇਬਾਕੀ ਨਾਲ ਨੰਗਾ ਕੀਤਾ ਹੈ ਪਰ ਉਸ ਦਾ ਮਕਸਦ ਕਿਸੇ ਦੀ ਪੱਤ ਉਤਾਰਨਾ ਜਾਂ ਬੇਜ਼ਤੀ ਕਰਨਾ ਨਹੀਂ ਸੀ ਸਗੋਂ ਬਦਲਦੀਆਂ ਕਠਿਨ ਪ੍ਰਸਥਿਤੀਆਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਮਾਨਸਿਕ ਵਿਵਹਾਰ ਕਿਵੇਂ ਬਦਲਦਾ ਹੈ, ਉਸ ਨੂੰ ਦਰਸਾ ਕੇ ਦਾਰਸ਼ਨਿਕ ਸਿੱਟੇ ਕੱਢਣੇ ਹਨ।¹⁷

ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਦੀ ਸੂਝ-ਬੂਝ ਇਸੇ ਗੱਲ ਵਿਚ ਨਿਹਿਤ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਆਪਣੇ ਕਿਸੇ ਵੀ ਨਿੱਜੀ ਮੁਨਾਫ਼ੇ ਲਈ ਕਦੇ ਕਿਸੇ ਨਾਲ ਨਹੀਂ ਜੁੜਿਆ। ਪਰ ਵਿਭਿੰਨ ਪਾਠਾਂ ਵਿਚਲੇ ਲਘੂ ਵੇਰਵਿਆਂ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਜਿਥੇ ਇਹ ਗਿਆਤ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਸਿਆਸਤਦਾਨ, ਸਾਹਿਤਕਾਰ ਅਤੇ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਵਿਭਾਗੀ ਦੋਸਤਾਂ ਨੇ ਉਸ ਦਾ ਸਾਥ ਦਿੱਤਾ, ਉਥੇ ਦੂਜੇ ਪਾਸੇ ਪਾਠਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਘੋਖਦਿਆਂ ਇਸ ਗੱਲ ਤੋਂ ਵੀ ਮੁਨਕਰ ਨਹੀਂ ਹੋਇਆ ਜਾ ਸਕਦਾ ਕਿ ਇਸ ਪਿਛੇ ਉਸ ਦੀ ਸਖ਼ਤ ਮਿਹਨਤ ਕਾਰਜਸ਼ੀਲ ਸੀ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਇਕ ਖ਼ਾਸੀਅਤ ਇਹ ਵੀ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਉਹ ਭਾਵੇਂ ਇਸ ਸਿਆਸਤ ਦੀ ਦੁਨੀਆਂ ਵਿਚ ਇਕ ਸਰਕਾਰੀ ਅਫ਼ਸਰ ਵਜੋਂ ਵਿਚਰਦਾ ਰਿਹਾ ਪਰ ਉਸ ਨੇ ਇਸ ਚਿੱਕੜ ਭਰੇ ਮਹੌਲ ਤੋਂ ਕੰਵਲ ਦੇ ਫੁੱਲ ਵਾਂਗ ਹਮੇਸ਼ਾ ਵਿਥ ਬਣਾਕੇ ਰੱਖੀ ਅਤੇ ਇਸ ਪ੍ਰਤੀ ਆਪਣਾ ਆਲੋਚਨਾਤਮਕ ਰਵੱਈਆ ਰੱਖਿਆ।

ਇਸੇ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਰਿਆਸਤ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿਚ ਫੈਲੀ ਹੋਈ ਦੂਸਰੀ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਸਿਆਸਤ ਦੇ ਪਾਜ ਖੋਲ੍ਹਦਿਆਂ ਬਿਰਤਾਂਤਕਾਰ ਲਿਖਦਾ ਹੈ ਕਿ “ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿੱਚ ਅੰਗਰੇਜ਼ੀ ਤੇ ਹਿੰਦੀ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰੀ ਦੀ ਵਾਗਡੋਰ ਚੋਖੇ ਸਮੇਂ ਤਕ ਗ਼ੈਰ-ਮੁਸਲਿਮ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰਾਂ ਕੋਲ ਰਹੀ। 1955 ਤਕ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਤੋਂ ਸ਼ਾਇਦ ਹੀ ਕੋਈ ਅੰਗਰੇਜ਼ੀ ਦਾ ਰੋਜ਼ਨਾਮਾ ਨਿਕਲਦਾ ਸੀ। ਸਾਰੀਆਂ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਜਲੰਧਰ ਤੇ ਚੰਡੀਗੜ੍ਹ ਤੋਂ ਆਉਂਦੀਆਂ ਸਨ, ਜਿਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਟ੍ਰਿਬਿਊਨ ਤੇ ਇੰਡੀਅਨ ਐਕਸਪ੍ਰੈਸ ਅੰਗਰੇਜ਼ੀ ਵਿੱਚ ਤੇ ਹਿੰਦੀ ਵਿੱਚ ਪੰਜਾਬ ਕੇਸਰੀ ਤੇ ਵੀਰ ਪ੍ਰਤਾਪ ਮਸ਼ਹੂਰ ਸਨ। ਉਰਦੂ ਵਿੱਚ ਵੀ ਹਿੰਦ ਸਮਾਚਾਰ, ਮਿਲਾਪ ਤੇ ਪ੍ਰਤਾਪ ਨੇ ਮਨਾਪਲੀ ਬਣਾਈ ਹੋਈ ਸੀ। ਮਿਲਾਪ ਤੇ ਪ੍ਰਤਾਪ ਕਾਫੀ ਚਿਰ ਪਹਿਲਾਂ ਤੋਂ ਬੰਦ ਹੋ ਚੁੱਕੇ ਹਨ, ਪਰ ਹਿੰਦ ਸਮਾਚਾਰ ਅੱਜ ਵੀ ਜੰਮੂ ਵਿੱਚ ਪੜ੍ਹਿਆ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਤੋਂ ਛੁੱਟ ਜੰਮੂ ਤੋਂ ਛਪਣ ਵਾਲੇ ਦੋ ਅੰਗਰੇਜ਼ੀ ਰੋਜ਼ਨਾਮੇ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਟਾਈਮਸ ਤੇ ਡੇਲੀ ਐਕਸਲੈਂਸੀਅਰ ਨਿਕਲਦੇ ਹਨ। ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਰਿਆਸਤੀ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਦੇ ਖਿਲਾਫ਼ ਜਾਂ ਹੱਕ ਵਿੱਚ ਲਿਖਣਾ ਕੇਂਦਰੀ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਅਤੇ ਵੱਖ-ਵੱਖ ਏਜੰਸੀਆਂ ਦੀ ਹਦਾਇਤ ਮੁਤਾਬਿਕ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਸੀ। ਸੂਚਨਾ ਵਿਭਾਗ ਉਤੇ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰੀ ਪੰਡਿਤਾਂ ਜਾਂ ਜੰਮੂ ਦੇ ਡੋਗਰੇ ਮੁਲਾਜ਼ਮਾਂ ਦਾ ਕਬਜ਼ਾ ਹੁੰਦਾ ਸੀ।”¹⁸ ਇਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੇ ਖੁਲਾਸਿਆਂ ਦੇ ਨਾਲ ਉਸ ਸਮੇਂ ਦੀ ਕੇਂਦਰ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਦੀਆਂ ਬਦਨੀਤੀਆਂ ਦਾ ਚਿਹਰਾ-ਮੁਹਰਾ ਸਾਹਮਣੇ ਆਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਨਿਆਂ ਅਤੇ ਸੱਚ ਦਾ ਬਿਆਨ ਕਰਨ ਵਾਲੀ ਕਲਮ ਵੀ ਰਾਜਨੀਤੀ ਦੀ ਬੁੱਕਲ ਵਿੱਚ ਜਾ ਬੈਠੀ ਸੀ। ਸ਼ੇਖ ਅਬਦੁੱਲਾ ਨੂੰ ਨੀਵਾਂ ਦਿਖਾਉਣ ਲਈ ਇੰਦਰਾ ਗਾਂਧੀ ਅਜਿਹੀਆਂ ਸ਼ਾਜਿਸਾਂ ਕਰ ਰਹੀ ਸੀ। ਇਹ ਜੰਗ ਕਾਫੀ ਸਮਾਂ ਚੱਲਦੀ ਰਹੀ। ਇੰਦਰਾ ਦੇ ਗੱਦੀ ਤੋਂ ਉਤਰਨ ਤੋਂ ਬਾਅਦ ਮੁਰਾਰ ਜੀ ਡਿਸਾਈ ਦੀ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਬਣੀ। ਜਨਤਾ ਪਾਰਟੀ ਦੇ ਨੁਮਾਇੰਦੇ ਵੀ ਰਿਆਸਤ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿੱਚ ਚੋਣਾਂ ਦੌਰਾਨ ਧਾਂਦਲੀਆਂ ਕਰਕੇ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਬਣਾਉਣ ਦੇ ਇੱਛਕ ਸਨ। ਪਰ ਸਰਕਾਰ ਦੀਆਂ ਗਤੀ ਵਿਧੀਆਂ ਦੇ ਵਿਰੋਧ ਵਿੱਚ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਸਲੀਮ ਬੇਗ ਦੇ ਹਵਾਲੇ ਨਾਲ ਲਿਖਦਾ ਹੈ:

ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦਿਨਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਆਪਣੇ ਦੋਸਤ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਸਦੀਕ ਕਾਤਿਬ ਨਾਲ ਮਿਲ ਕੇ ਸਪਤਾਹਿਕ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰ ਉਰਦੂ ਵਿੱਚ ਕੱਢਿਆ, ਜਿਸ ਵਿੱਚ ਸ਼ੇਖ ਅਬਦੁੱਲਾ ਤੇ ਨੈਸ਼ਨਲ ਕਾਨਫਰੰਸ ਦੀਆਂ ਪਾਲਸੀਆਂ ਦੇ ਹੱਕ ਵਿੱਚ ਲੇਖ ਹੁੰਦੇ। ਉਸ ਸਪਤਾਹਿਕ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰ ਦਾ ਨਾਂ 'ਕੈਨਵਸ' ਸੀ।...ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦਿਨਾਂ ਵਿੱਚ ਹੀ ਪ੍ਰਧਾਨ ਮੰਤਰੀ ਮੁਰਾਰ ਜੀ ਡਿਸਾਈ, ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਦੇ ਸਰਕਾਰੀ ਦੌਰੇ 'ਤੇ ਆਏ। ਮੀਰ ਵਾਇਜ਼ ਮੌਲਵੀ ਫਾਰੂਕ ਨੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਚਾਹ ਦੀ ਦਾਵਤ ਦਿੱਤੀ।...ਪ੍ਰਧਾਨ ਮੰਤਰੀ ਨੂੰ ਜਿਸ ਕਮਰੇ ਵਿੱਚ ਬਿਠਾਇਆ ਗਿਆ ਉਥੇ ਕਾਇਦ-ਏ-ਆਜ਼ਮ ਮੁਹੰਮਦ ਅਲੀ ਜਿਨਾਹ ਦੀ ਇੱਕ ਵੱਡੀ ਫੋਟੋ ਟੰਗੀ ਹੋਈ ਸੀ। ਮੌਲਵੀ ਫਾਰੂਕ ਨੇ ਬੜੇ ਫਖ਼ਰ ਨਾਲ ਪ੍ਰਧਾਨ ਮੰਤਰੀ ਨੂੰ ਦੱਸਿਆ ਕਿ ਜਿਸ ਕੁਰਸੀ 'ਤੇ ਉਹ ਬੈਠੇ ਹਨ, ਉਸ ਕੁਰਸੀ 'ਤੇ ਜਿਨਾਹ ਸਾਹਿਬ ਵੀ ਬੈਠੇ ਸਨ। ਇਸ ਘਟਨਾ ਨੂੰ ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਆਪਣੇ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰ ਵਿੱਚ ਖੂਬ ਉਛਾਲਿਆ ਤੇ ਜਦ ਅਖ਼ਬਾਰਾਂ ਪ੍ਰਧਾਨ ਮੰਤਰੀ ਨੂੰ ਦੱਸੀਆਂ ਗਈਆਂ, ਤਾਂ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਾਪਿਸ ਦਿੱਲੀ ਪਹੁੰਚਦਿਆਂ ਪਹੁੰਚਦਿਆਂ ਇੱਕ ਅਹਿਮ ਫੈਸਲਾ ਕਰ ਲਿਆ ਅਤੇ ਦਿੱਲੀ ਜਾਂਦਿਆਂ ਹੀ ਮੰਤਰੀ ਮੰਡਲ ਦੀ ਮੀਟਿੰਗ ਬੁਲਾਈ ਤੇ ਸਖ਼ਤੀ ਨਾਲ ਹੁਕਮ ਦਿੱਤਾ ਕਿ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿੱਚ ਚੋਣਾਂ ਨਿਰਪੱਖ ਹੋਣੀਆਂ ਚਾਹੀਦੀਆਂ ਹਨ।¹⁹

ਉੱਪਰ ਅਸੀਂ ਵਿਚਾਰਿਆ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਰਾਜਸੀ ਦਬਾਅ ਅਧੀਨ ਕਿਸ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਪੱਤਰਕਾਰੀ ਆਪਣੀ ਹੋਂਦ ਗਵਾ ਬੈਠਦੀ ਹੈ। ਪਰ ਕਿਹਾ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਰਾਤ ਤੋਂ ਬਾਅਦ ਸਵੇਰ ਜ਼ਰੂਰ ਹੁੰਦੀ ਹੈ। ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਕਲਮ ਵਿਚੋਂ ਨਿਕਲੇ ਚਾਨਣ ਰੂਪੀ ਲਫਜ਼ਾਂ ਨੇ ਰਾਤ ਦੀ ਇਸ ਕਾਲਖ ਨੂੰ ਚੀਰ ਕੇ ਇਕ ਸੱਜਰੀ ਸਵੇਰ ਨੂੰ ਖੁਸ਼ਾਮਦੀਨ ਕਿਹਾ। ਇਉਂ, ਸ਼ੇਖ ਅਬਦੁੱਲਾ ਦੀ ਪਾਰਟੀ ਦੀ ਜਿੱਤ ਹੋਈ ਅਤੇ ਫਿਰਕਾਪ੍ਰਸਤੀ ਦੀ ਭਾਵਨਾ ਰੱਖਣ ਵਾਲੇ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਹਾਰ ਦਾ ਸਾਹਮਣਾ ਕਰਨਾ ਪਿਆ। ਇਸੇ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਪਾਕਿਸਤਾਨ ਯਾਤਰਾ ਸਮੇਂ ਭਾਰਤੀ ਕਬਜ਼ੇ ਵਾਲੇ ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਬਾਰੇ ਹੋਏ ਸਵਾਲਾਂ ਦਾ ਉੱਤਰ ਦਿੰਦਿਆਂ ਉਸ ਦੇ ਹਰੇਕ ਲਫਜ਼ ਵਿੱਚ ਦੇਸ਼ ਪਿਆਰ ਅਤੇ ਇਕ ਸੱਚਾ ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨ ਹੋਣ ਦਾ ਜ਼ਜ਼ਬਾ ਝਲਕਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇੰਝ, ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਆਪਣੇ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਦਲੀਲਾਂ ਸਹਿਤ ਪ੍ਰਗਟਾਉਣ ਵਾਲਾ ਮਾਹਿਰ ਵਿਦਵਾਨ-ਵਕਤਾ ਅਤੇ ਸੂਝਵਾਨ ਬੁਲਾਰਾ ਹੈ।

ਉਪਰੋਕਤ ਵਿਚਾਰ-ਚਰਚਾ ਤੋਂ ਬਾਅਦ ਇਹ ਕਿਹਾ ਜਾ ਸਕਦਾ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਮਿਹਨਤ, ਲਗਨ, ਇਮਾਨਦਾਰੀ, ਚੰਗਾ

ਆਚਰਣ ਅਤੇ ਲਿਆਕਤ ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਦੀ ਜੀਵਨ ਸ਼ੈਲੀ ਨੂੰ ਨਿਖਾਰਨ ਵਾਲੇ ਅਹਿਮ ਪਹਿਲੂ ਹਨ। ਉਸ ਦਾ ਚੇਤਨ ਮਨ ਮਜ਼ਬੂਤੀ ਕੱਟੜਤਾ ਤੋਂ ਕੋਹਾਂ ਦੂਰ ਹੈ। ਹੱਜ ਯਾਤਰਾ ਸਮੇਂ ਜਿਥੇ ਉਹ ਇਸਲਾਮਿਕ ਸਮਾਜ-ਸਭਿਆਚਾਰ ਵਿਚ ਨਿਭਾਈਆਂ ਜਾਂਦੀਆਂ ਰਹੁ-ਰੀਤਾਂ ਨੂੰ ਬੜੀ ਸੁਚੱਜਤਾ ਨਾਲ ਪ੍ਰਗਟਾਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ, ਉਥੇ ਧਰਮ ਦੇ ਅਲੰਬਤਦਾਰਾਂ ਦੀਆਂ ਕਰਤੂਤਾਂ 'ਤੇ ਪਰਦਾ ਨਹੀਂ ਪਾਉਂਦਾ ਸਗੋਂ ਇਸ ਧਾਰਮਕ ਅਸਥਾਨ 'ਤੇ ਆਏ ਹਾਜੀਆਂ ਦੀ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਦੁਆਰਾ ਕੀਤੀ ਜਾਂਦੀ ਲੁੱਟ ਨੂੰ ਬੇਬਾਕੀ ਨਾਲ ਨੰਗਾ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸੇ ਤਰ੍ਹਾਂ ਰਿਆਸਤ ਜੰਮੂ-ਕਸ਼ਮੀਰ ਵਿਚ ਚੱਲ ਰਹੇ ਮਦਰੱਸਿਆਂ ਦੀ ਹਾਲਤ ਨੂੰ ਸੁਧਾਰਨ ਅਤੇ ਇਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਵਿਚ ਪੜ੍ਹ ਰਹੇ ਬੱਚਿਆਂ ਦੀ ਸਿੱਖਿਆ ਨੂੰ ਸਮੇਂ ਦੇ ਹਾਣ ਦੀ ਬਣਾਉਣ ਲਈ ਅਨੇਕ ਯਤਨ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਪਰ ਬੱਚਿਆਂ ਵਿਚ ਵੱਧ ਰਹੀ ਮਜ਼ਬੂਤੀ ਸ਼ਕੀਰਣਤਾ ਅਤੇ ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਦੀ ਸਿੱਖਿਆ ਦੇ ਪਛੜੇਪਣ ਲਈ ਉਹ ਮੌਲਵੀਆਂ ਨੂੰ ਜ਼ਿੰਮੇਵਾਰ ਠਹਿਰਾਉਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਅਜਿਹੀ ਸੁਤੰਤਰ ਅਤੇ ਨਿਰਪੱਖ ਸੋਚ ਦੇ ਸਦਕਾ ਹੀ ਉਹ ਅਨੇਕ ਗ਼ੈਰ-ਮੁਸਲਮਾਨ ਲੋਕਾਂ ਦੇ ਸਤਿਕਾਰ ਦਾ ਪਾਤਰ ਹੈ। ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਨੇ ਆਪਣੇ ਜੀਵਨ ਪੰਥ ਵਿਚ ਬਹੁਤ ਸਾਰੀਆਂ ਆਰਥਕ ਔਕੜਾਂ ਦਾ ਸਾਹਮਣਾ ਕੀਤਾ। ਇਸ ਮਸਲੇ ਬਾਰੇ ਵਿਚਾਰਨ ਵਾਲੀ ਮਹੱਤਵਪੂਰਣ ਗੱਲ ਇਹ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਮੁਸਕਲਾਂ ਦੇ ਭੰਵਰ ਵਿਚ ਫਸਿਆ ਹੋਇਆ ਵੀ ਉਹ ਨਿਰਾਸ਼ਾ ਦੇ ਆਲਮ ਵਿਚ ਨਹੀਂ ਡੁੱਬਦਾ, ਸਗੋਂ ਆਸ਼ਾਵਾਦੀ ਵਿਚਾਰਾਂ ਦਾ ਪੱਲਾ ਫੜ੍ਹਕੇ ਸਫਲਤਾ ਦੀ ਪੌੜੀ ਚੜ੍ਹਦਾ ਜਾਂਦਾ ਹੈ। ਉਸ ਦੀ ਕਾਮਯਾਬੀ ਦਾ ਇਕ ਰਾਜ਼ ਇਹ ਵੀ ਹੈ ਕਿ ਜੀਵਨ ਦੀਆਂ ਮੁੱਢਲੀਆਂ ਲੋੜਾਂ ਦੇ ਪੂਰ ਹੋਣ ਤੋਂ ਬਿਨਾਂ ਹੋਰ ਕੋਈ ਖਵਾਇਸ਼ਾਂ ਨਹੀਂ ਪਾਲਦਾ। ਖਾਲਿਦ ਰਾਸ਼ਟਰੀ, ਅੰਤਰ-ਰਾਸ਼ਟਰੀ ਅਤੇ ਰਿਆਸਤ ਅੰਦਰਲੀ ਸਿਆਸਤ ਵਿਚ ਫੈਲੇ ਪ੍ਰਦੂਸ਼ਣ ਨੂੰ ਆਪਣੀਆਂ ਲਿਖਤਾਂ, ਭਾਸ਼ਣਾਂ ਅਤੇ ਇੰਟਰਵਿਊਆਂ ਰਾਹੀਂ ਜੱਗ-ਜਾਹਰ ਕਰਦਾ ਹੈ। ਇਸ ਕੰਮ ਨੂੰ ਉਹ ਆਪਣੀ ਨੈਤਿਕ ਜ਼ਿੰਮੇਵਾਰੀ ਮੰਨਦਾ ਹੈ ਅਤੇ ਫਿਰਕਾਪ੍ਰਸਤੀ ਖਿਲਾਫ ਆਵਾਜ਼ ਬੁਲੰਦ ਕਰਨ ਨੂੰ ਆਪਣਾ ਧਰਮ। ਇੰਝ, ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਧਾਰਮਕ, ਜਾਤੀਗਤ, ਸਭਿਆਚਾਰਕ, ਲਿੰਗਕ, ਖੇਤਰੀ ਅਤੇ ਭਾਸ਼ਾਈ ਵਲਗਣਾਂ ਤੋਂ ਮੁਕਤ ਹੋ ਕੇ ਇਕ ਸੰਸਥਾ ਵਾਂਗ ਕੰਮ ਕਰਦਾ ਦਿਖਾਈ ਦਿੰਦਾ ਹੈ।

1. ਸਤਿੰਦਰ ਸਿੰਘ, **ਆਧੁਨਿਕ ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਵਾਰਤਕ ਦਾ ਇਤਿਹਾਸ (ਜਿਲਦ-12)**, ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਅਕਾਦਮੀ ਦਿੱਲੀ, 2006, ਪੰਨਾ 116
2. ਮਨਮੋਹਨ, 'ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ' : ਪੰਜਾਬੀ ਸਵੈਜੀਵਨੀ ਸਾਹਿਤ ਦੀ ਕਾਬਿਲ-ਏ-ਗੌਰ ਲਿਖਤ, ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ, **ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ**, ਚੇਤਨਾ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਸ਼ਨ, ਲੁਧਿਆਣਾ, 2012, ਪੰਨਾ 10
3. ਖਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ, **ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ**, ਚੇਤਨਾ ਪ੍ਰਕਾਸ਼ਨ, ਲੁਧਿਆਣਾ, 2012, ਪੰਨੇ 16-19
4. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 87
5. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 87
6. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 117
7. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 16
8. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 81
9. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨੇ 119-20
10. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨੇ 22-23
11. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 28
12. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 33
13. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 34
14. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 38
15. **ਉਹੀ**, ਪੰਨਾ 26

16. ਉਹੀ, ਪੰਨਾ 49
17. 'ਮਾਟੀ ਕੁਦਮ ਕਰੇਂਦੀ ਯਾਰ: ਸੱਚ ਅਤੇ ਕੱਥ ਦਾ ਸੁਮੇਲ', ਸ਼ੀਰਾਜ਼ਾ (ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ ਵਿਸ਼ੇਸ਼ ਅੰਕ), ਮਾਰਚ-ਅਪ੍ਰੈਲ-2014, ਜੇ. ਐਂਡ ਕੇ. ਅਕੈਡਮੀ ਆਫ਼ ਆਰਟ, ਕਲਚਰ ਐਂਡ ਲੈਂਗੂਵੇਜ਼ਿਜ਼, ਜੰਮੂ, ਪੰਨਾ 29
18. ਖ਼ਾਲਿਦ ਹੁਸੈਨ, ਉਹੀ, ਪੰਨਾ 84
19. ਉਹੀ, ਪੰਨੇ 137-38

GUIDELINES

In the present scenario it has become pertinent for institutions of higher learning to provide a platform where all the disciplines are articulated in a manner where they have their own clearly demarcated space and yet have room for dialogue, collaboration, contestation, confirmation or negation across disciplines and this necessitates the multidisciplinary approach of the journal *Researcher*.

AIMS AND SCOPE

Researcher is a bi-annual, multidisciplinary and refereed (peer-reviewed) Journal of University of Jammu that seeks to provide a specialized academic platform and reference for the dissemination of research in the broad areas of academic disciplines including Science and Technology, Arts and Humanities, Social Sciences and Business Studies. This includes both qualitative and quantitative empirical work, besides theoretical and conceptual contributions. The ambit of the Journal is international and submissions are subject to blind peer review process. The editorial policy of the Journal is to invite the research articles from academicians, researchers, policy makers and practitioners. The publication is intended for readers including litterateurs, academicians, educationists, professionals, policy makers, research scholars and students.

PUBLICATION POLICY

- ◆ Research articles will be considered for publication only if they fall within the ambit of aim and scope of the Journal. The research articles will be accessed on the basis of:
 - a) Originality;
 - b) Relevance;
 - c) Quality of research;
 - d) Research contribution and applied significance.
- ◆ The Journal does not levy any submission/publication charges. Further, the author shall be given a complementary contributor's copy of the Journal.
- ◆ University of Jammu owns the copyright © of the research articles published in *Researcher*. Articles published in the *Researcher* should not be reproduced/reprinted in any form without seeking prior written permission from the Convener, Publication Cell, University of Jammu.
- ◆ **Disclaimer:** The views expressed in the articles in the *Researcher* do not necessarily reflect the opinion of the University of Jammu.

PEER REVIEW POLICY

This Journal operates a double blind review process. All contributions are initially assessed by the Editorial Board for suitability for the Journal. Research article deemed suitable is sent to a minimum of two independent expert reviewers to assess the quality of the paper. The Editorial Board is responsible for the final decision regarding acceptance or rejection of research article based on the reviewers' comments. The Editorial Board's decision shall be final.

SUBMISSION GUIDELINES

- ◆ The Journal encourages the submission of works in the specified disciplines in a variety of styles including articles, case-studies, review essays, book reviews and other scholarly papers.
- ◆ Only original and unpublished work is sought for consideration of publication in the Journal.
- ◆ The submission of research articles is open throughout the year on rolling basis. Since the periodicity of the publication is bi-annual in nature, articles submitted till 30, April will be considered for June issue and till 31, October for December issue.
- ◆ Any research article that is identical to or substantially similar to a work already published or under review for conference / publication will not be considered.
- ◆ Unless expressly indicated, otherwise, all correspondence will be with the first author.
- ◆ Receipt of all research articles will be acknowledged.
- ◆ Each submission will be blind reviewed for technical merit and content.
- ◆ The first page of the research article should be the title page. It should contain the title of the research article and the name, designation and affiliation of the author along with the address, phone/fax number and email address of the author and co-author(s).
- ◆ The second page should contain the research article title, the abstract (not more than 150 words) and keywords (a minimum of 4 and maximum of 6 words).
- ◆ All the figures and tables should appear at the end of the research articles; should be properly numbered in Arabic notation; and bear appropriate title and labels.
- ◆ The research article should normally be of 3000-5000 words including figures and tables typed in double space and printed in 12-point font on A-4 size paper with 1 inch margin on all four sides. All tables and figures must be serially numbered, sequentially following references to them in the text. All exhibits should be in black and white only.
- ◆ The research article should not contain footnotes. References should be placed at the end of the research articles after the figures and tables. The references should mention

only those sources, which are cited in the text of the research article.

- ◆ The first paragraph of any section, including the introduction, should not be indented. Major headings should be left justified and bold with one line above and one line below the heading to separate it from the text.
- ◆ Authors are advised to follow uniform citation and referencing style throughout the manuscript. Following discipline specific reference styles are accepted:
 - i. APA Style for Social Science and Business Studies.
 - ii. MLA Style for Arts and Humanities.
 - iii. ACS/APS/IEEE for Science and Technology.
 - iv. Standard International/Indian Style approved by the University of Jammu for any other subject not covered above.

ETHICS POLICY

- ◆ Authors should submit only unpublished original research article that has not been submitted for publication or published elsewhere. A declaration by the author(s) should be made that the paper has not been sent elsewhere for publication. It should be made on separate sheet with the title of the research article, name(s) of the author(s)/ co-author(s) full postal address for correspondence and signature.
- ◆ Any research article which is found to be plagiarised or if is having text match above the standards as fixed by the Editorial Board will be rejected out rightly. Authors are required to scan submissions using plagiarism detection software before submission of research article. The author shall bear the full responsibility if any malpractice is detected. Authors involvement in any of the following will be treated as malpractice:
 - a) Falsification of data
 - b) Plagiarism
 - c) Improprieties of authorship
 - d) Misappropriation of ideas of other scholars
 - e) Violation of generally accepted research practices
 - f) Material failure to comply with legislative and regulatory requirements affecting research
 - g) Inappropriate behavior in relation to misconduct.

In such cases the decision of the Editorial Board shall be final and binding.

- ◆ Authors must assign copyright of the research article in favour of the *Researcher*.
- ◆ Authors are advised to avoid biased language and subjective comments/opinion that don't in any way pertain to the research problem.

INSTRUCTIONS TO THE REVIEWERS

- ◆ The submitted research article is a privileged communication and reviewers must treat it as confidential.
- ◆ The reviewer must not (or allow anyone else to) retain/copy or share the research article with any one without the explicit permission of the editor.
- ◆ The reviewer shall not disclose his/her identity and the review outcome with anyone other than the editor of the Journal.
- ◆ The reviewer must return the reviewed research article within two weeks from the date of the receipt.
- ◆ **Evaluation Criteria:** The criteria for evaluating a research article encompasses the evaluation of the attributes as given in the following research article review form:

RESEARCH ARTICLE REVIEW FORM

✓ **Rankings:** Please use the symbol (✓) to indicate your assessment

(5= Excellent, 4= Good, 3= Average, 2= Poor, 1= Very Poor, NA= Not applicable)

Sl.No.	Key Evaluation Parameters	1	2	3	4	5	N.A
1.	Originality of the work						
2.	Contemporaneity of the subject						
3.	Contribution to existing knowledge						
4.	Adequacy of empirical/theoretical background						
5.	Appropriateness of the research methodology						
6.	Citation and referencing as per the style						
7.	Analysis and inferences						
8.	Legitimacy of the conclusions						
9.	Applied significance						
10.	Organization of the research article						
11.	Quality of the communication in terms of use of language.						
12.	Appropriateness for publication						

Reviewers' Detailed Comments (Reviewers may use separate sheet)

1. Reviewer to comment on the strengths and weaknesses of the research paper.

2. Additional inputs to the author on how he/she can make the topic more meaningfully aligned to the discipline specific requirement.
3. General comments for improving/adding, references, clarifying data analysis, structure and format, language editing, communication, etc.

RESEARCHER

A Multidisciplinary Journal

Vol. XIV No.2, 2018
ISSN 2278-9022

SUBSCRIPTION FORM

I wish to subscribe/renew my subscription to **Researcher: A Multidisciplinary Journal** for 1/2/3 years(s). A draft/cheque bearing No. _____ dated _____ for Rs. _____ drawn in favour of Publication Cell, University of Jammu is enclosed.

Name : _____

Address : _____

Pin _____ State _____ Country _____

Tel Number _____ Mobile No. _____

Email: _____

Signature _____

Subscription Rates (INR)			
Category	1 year	2 year	3 year
Institutional	1000	1500	2000
Faculty/Student/Scholar	500	750	1000

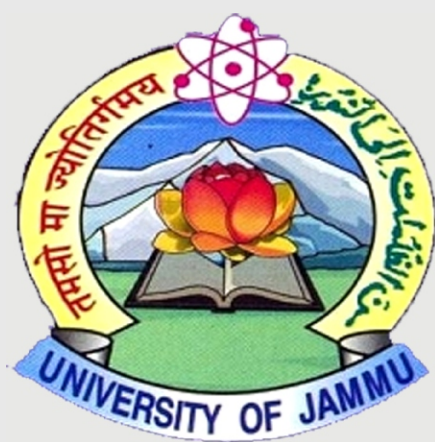
Mailing Address:-

Convener, Publication Cell,
University of Jammu, Jammu, J&K, India Pin - 180006
E-mail : publication.ju@gmail.com

LIST OF CONTRIBUTORS

Abdul Gani	Central University of Kashmir, Nowgam, Srinagar. Email: abdualgani@cukashmir.ac.in
Ajay kumar	School of Biotechnology, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: mrkalotra181@gmail.com
Akansha Rathore	Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu. Email: rathoreakanksha15@gmail.com
Alka Sharma	The Business School. University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: sharma.alka1568@gmail.com
Ankit Mahajan	Human Genetics Research Group, SMVDU, Katra, Jammu. Email: anktmahajan@gmail.com
Asif Ali	Department of HRM& OM, Central University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: easif.101@gmail.com
Brajeshwar Singh	Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu. Email: brajeshbhau@yahoo.co.in
Diksha Raina	Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu. Email: diksharaina074@gmail.com
Farah.S.Choudhary	The Business School. University of Jammu, Jammu Email: farah_choudhary@yahoo.co.in
Harjinder Singh	Department of Punjabi, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: harjinderkhanna@gmail.com
Kamal Singh Chouhan	Department of Strategic and Regional Studies, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: komalchauhan410@gmail.com
Madhulika Bhagat	School of Biotechnology, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: madhilikasbt@gmail.com
Meenu Verma	Department of Buddhist Studies, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: vermameenujmu@gmail.com
Pallavi Prasad	Satyawati College(Day), University of Delhi. Email: npdel@yahoo.com
Rama Sharma	Genome Research Laboratory, University of Jammu. Email: rmasharma988@gmail.com
Ravideep Badyal	Department of Laws, GNDU, Amritsar. Email: rd.badyal999@gmail.com
Rabinder Singh	Department of Tourism and Travel Management, Central University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: rabindersingh2@gmail.com
Ruqui Ayob	Central University of Kashmir, Nowgam, Srinagar. Email: ruqiaayoub.182@gmail.com
Sangita Gupta	Department of Library and Information Technology, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: sangitauniv@gmail.com
Sudesh Kumar	Department of Library and Information Technology, University of Jammu, Jammu. Email: sghordi@gmail.com
Shashi.S.Sharma	Department of Microbiology, Government Medical College, Jammu. Email: drshashisharma.micro@gmail.com

Shivani Sharma	Department of Political Science, University of Jammu. Email:sharmashivani1704@gmail.com
Sneahpreet Kour	Division of Microbiology, Faculty of Basic Sciences, SKUAST, Jammu. Email: rathoreakanksha15@gmail.com
Sumit Garg	Department of English, Punjab University College, Bathinda, Punjab. Email:sumitgarg.23@gmail.com
Sushil Kumar	Department of English, YCOE, Punjab University College, Bathinda, Punjab. Email: Tejeshwar Singh Govt. MAM College, Jammu.
Vinod kumar	St.Soldier Law College, Jalandhar, Punjab. Email: pulvin1985@gmail.com



Golden Jubilee celebrations

University of Jammu

Researcher : A Multidisciplinary Journal is a bi-annual refereed (peer-reviewed) Journal of University of Jammu that seeks to provide a specialized academic platform for the dissemination of research in the broad areas of academic disciplines including Science and Technology, Arts and Humanities, Social Sciences and Business Studies. The ambit of the Journal is international and submissions are subject to blind peer review process. The editorial policy of the Journal is to invite the research articles from academicians, researchers, policy makers and practitioners. The publication is intended for readers including litterateurs, academicians, educationists, professionals, policy makers, research scholars and students. All the articles are considered for publication only if they fall within the ambit of aim and scope of the Journal.

Call for Papers for Next Issue

Full paper submission	April 30, 2019
Confirmation of paper	May 30, 2019
Re-submission of revised paper	June 15, 2019
Issue publication	June 30, 2019

Refer to "Guidelines" inside for details on paper submission.



Published by

Publication Cell on behalf of the Registrar, University of Jammu, Jammu, India.

Address

University of Jammu

Baba Saheb Ambedkar Road, Jammu-180006 (J&K)

E-mail : publication.ju@gmail.com

Editorial/Assistance : Sh. Parshotam Lal & Sh. Gourav Sharma

©Publication Cell, University of Jammu, Jammu. All copy rights are reserved. The views expressed by the authors in this journal do not represent the views either of the editor or the University of Jammu.